THE SPANISH VERB

PETER E. TRAUB

Antología de Cuentos Españoles

N° 6

WILLIAM F. MAAG LIBRARY
YOUNGSTOWN STATE UNIVERSITY

THE

SPANISH VERB

WITH AN INTRODUCTION ON

SPANISH PRONUNCIATION

BY

1ST LIEUT. PETER E. TRAUB, 1ST U. S. CAVALRY

ASSISTANT PROFESSOR OF FRENCH AT THE U. S. MILITARY ACADEMY

UNDER THE DIRECTION OF

PROFESSOR E. E. WOOD

DEPARTMENT OF MODERN LANGUAGES, U. S. M A.

WITHDRAWN

NEW YORK - : - CINCINNATI - : - CHICAGO

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

COPYRIGHT, 1900, BY
P. E. TRAUB

THE SPANISH VERB
E-P 9

PC
4271
.T8

PREFACE

Owing to the acquisition of our new territory in the Atlantic and Pacific as the result of the Hispano-American War of 1898, an intimate knowledge of the Spanish language has suddenly become of great military, naval, industrial, and commercial importance. The Pronunciation and the Verb are the prime factors of this knowledge, since without them the intelligent expression of thought would be impossible.

The necessity for writing this book lies in the fact that there is no treatise on the Spanish verb in existence, and no satisfactory work on Spanish pronunciation.

This book embodies the results of the corresponding portion of the system in vogue at the United States Military Academy, whereby a thorough knowledge of the essentials of Spanish is imparted to the cadet in the short period of three months.

The portion treating of pronunciation is in accordance with the latest teaching of the Spanish Academy, and takes into account the peculiarities attending the Spanish-American speech as found to-day in our Island possessions. The system followed in the verb is that of constant repetition, every verb being fully written out, even the English translation in each case. Experience in teaching convinces nearly all instructors that constant and unabridged repetition, not only for the ear but also for the eye, is the only correct way to teach a language, and more especially the verbs of a language.

A constant reference was of course necessary to the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, the foundation of all works on this language published here and abroad.

WILLIAM F. MAAG LIBRARY
YOUNGSTOWN STATE UNIVERSITY
105722

I wish to tender my grateful acknowledgments to Professor E. E Wood, Department of Modern Languages, U. S. M. A., for nearly everything of value and originality in this book, both in the material and in the arrangement. The explanation of the reflexive substitute for the passive, the lucid method of writing out the imperative affirmative and negative, the presentation of the reflexive verbs, the uses of *ser* and *estar*, and nearly all the remarks concerning the formation of the verb and the use of the tenses, are original with him, have been constantly made use of by him in the section-room at West Point, and now appear in print for the first time. Even when occupied with most pressing duties, he would kindly consent to go over the manuscript patiently, advising, correcting and suggesting points that invariably enhanced its value.

PETER E. TRAUB.

WASHINGTON, D. C., October 1, 1899.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

SPANISH PRONUNCIATION

	PAGE
The Alphabet	1
Pronunciation	1
Vowels	2
Consonants	3
Exercises for Vowels and Consonants	5
Diphthongs and Triphthongs	6
Exercises for Diphthongs and Triphthongs	6
The Written or Graphic Accent	7
Syllabication	8
Capitals and Punctuation	9
General Exercises	9
Reading Exercise	10
Spanish-American Pronunciation	12

THE SPANISH VERB

Classification of Spanish Verbs	13
The Three Conjugations	13
On the Use of the Tenses	15
General Remarks on the Formation of the Verb	17
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb *Haber*	20
Regular Verbs: Terminations of the Three Conjugations	21
Conjugation of the Model Verb *Hablar*	24
The Formation of the Compound Tenses	27
Compound Tenses of *Hablar*	28
The Interrogative Conjugation	30
The Negative Conjugation	31
The Negative-Interrogative Conjugation	34
Conjugation of the Model Verb *Comer*	36
Conjugation of the Model Verb *Vivir*	38
Orthographic Changes	40
Table of Orthographic Changes	40
Conjugation of the Verb *Sacar*	42
" " " *Pagar*	44
" " " *Averiguar*	46
" " " *Lanzar*	48

PAGE

Conjugation of the Verb *Vencer* 50
" " " *Esparcir* 52
" " " *Coger* 54
" " " *Dirigir* 56
" " " *Delinquir* 58
" " " *Distinguir* 60
" " " *Mullir* 62
" " " *Bruñir* 64
" " " *Tañer* 66
" " " *Creer* 68
" " " *Continuar* 70
" " Auxiliary Verb *Estar* 72
" " Progressive Verb *Estar Comiendo* . . . 74
Pronominal Verbs 76
Table of Personal Pronouns and their Inflections 79
Conjugation of the (Accusative) Reflexive Verb *Lavarse* . . . 80
Negative and Interrogative Conjugations of Reflexive Verbs . . 82
Conjugation of the (Dative) Reflexive Verb *Permitirse* . . . 84
Conjugation of the Permanent Reflexive Verb *Alegrarse* . . 86
Impersonal Conjugation of the Permanent Reflexive Verb *Alegrarse* . 88
Impersonal Reflexive used for the Personal Reflexive . . . 90
Conjugation of the Reciprocal Verb *Abrazarse* 91
" " Auxiliary Verb *Ser* 92
" " Passive Verb *Ser Amado* 94
Reflexive Substitute for the Passive 96
Impersonal Verbs 97
Conjugation of Impersonal Verbs 99
Irregular Verbs 104

First Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Pensar* 108
" " " " *Errar* 112
" " " " *Sonar* 114
" " " " *Jugar* 116
" " " " *Perder* 118
" " " " *Mover* 120
" " " " *Oler* 122
" " " " *Cocer* 124
" " " " *Discernir* 126

Second Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Sentir* 128
" " " " *Erguir* 130
" " " " *Adquirir* 132
" " " " *Morir* 134

PAGE

Third Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Servir* 136
" " " " *Reir* 138
Fourth Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Conocer* 140
" " " " *Lucir* 144
Fifth Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Atribuir* 146
" " " " *Argüir* 148
Sixth Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Andar* 150
" " " " *Caber* 152
" " " " *Decir* 154
" " " " *Traducir* 156
" " " " *Hacer* 158
" " " " *Poder* 160
" " " " *Poner* 162
" " " " *Querer* 164
" " " " *Saber* 166
" " " " *Tener* 168
" " " " *Traer* 170
" " " " *Venir* 172
Seventh Class:
Conjugation of the Irregular Verb *Asir* 174
" " " " *Caer* 176
" " " " *Dar* 178
" " " " *Ir* 180
" " " " *Irse* 182
" " " " *Oír* 184
" " " " *Salir* 186
" " " " *Valer* 188
" " " " *Ver* 190
" " " " *Vacer* 192
Table of the Classes of Irregular Verbs 194
Defective Verbs 195
Conjugation of the Defective Verb *Abolir* 196
Other Defective Verbs 198
Irregular Past Participles 200

INDEX 203

SPANISH

PRONUNCIATION AND ACCENT

THE ALPHABET

1. The Spanish alphabet comprises thirty letters; twenty-six simple and four compound, as follows:

Characters	Names	Pronunciation	Characters	Names	Pronunciation
a	a	*a* in *mama*	n	ene	*ā' nay*
b	be	*bay*	ñ	eñe	*ain' yay*
c	ce	*thā* in *thane*	o	o	*o* in *lone*
ch	che	*chā* in *chafe*	p	pe	*pay*
d	de	*they*	q	cu	*coo*
e	e	*ā* in *bale*	r	ere	*ā' ray*
f	efe	*ā' fay*	rr	erre	*air' ray*
g	ge	*hay*	s	ese	*ā' say*
h	hache	*ă' tchay*	t	te	*tā* in *take*
i	i	*ee* in *fee*	u	u	*oo* in *pool*
j	jota	*hō'ta*	v	ve	*vay*
k	ka	*ca* in *carry*	w	doble u	*though' blay oo*
l	ele	*ā' lay*	x	equis	*ā' kees*
ll	elle	*ail' yay*	y	ye	*yay*
m	eme	*ā' may*	z	zeta	*thā' tă*, (*th* in *thane*)

2. These letters, consisting of vowels and consonants, are all of the feminine gender and, with the exception of *c* and *g*, have always practically the same sound. Ex.: la i, las íes; la jota, las jotas.

3. *K* and *w* are used only in words from foreign languages. Ex.: Wáshington, kilogramo.

PRONUNCIATION

4. In Spanish the vowel sounds preponderate. They are full and sonorous, whereas the consonant sounds are more or less slurred and even suppressed.

5. With the exception of *h* and of *u* when the latter is placed after *q* (see 27), and in certain cases when placed after *g* (see 30, 3), there are no silent letters in Spanish; for, excepting the above, every letter in a word is pronounced.

6. The sounds in Spanish are not given as sharply as in English, tonic accent being nothing more than a lengthening of the accented syllable. This indolent intonation produces a more or less drawling effect in the language, when spoken slowly.

NOTE. — In the written or graphic accent is explained (see 44) the vowel to be prolonged in sound will be indicated in heavy type. Should a written accent (´) appear over a vowel in heavy type, the sound is not at all affected thereby.

VOWELS

7. The vowels are a, e, i, (y,) o, u.

a	sounds like *a* in *mama*.	Ex.: **la, ma, na, ta, fa.**
e	sounds like *a* in *bale*.	Ex.: **le, me, ne, te, fe.**
i (y)	sounds like *ee* in *fee*.	Ex.: **li, ly, mi, my, ni, ny, ti, ty.**
o	sounds like *o* in *lone*.	Ex.: **lo, mo, no, to, fo.**
u	sounds like *oo* in *pool*.	Ex.: **lu, mu, nu, tu, fu.**

NOTE. — In these and similar monosyllabic examples the vowels in Spanish are pronounced without the slight glide at the end so common in English, and making almost an additional syllable. Pronounce *ti* and *pronounce* as though it were 'lah, 'leah, 'lah, 'lah, 'lah, etc., but *ti* pronounce with the sounds, clear, full and prolonged, la, le, li, lo, lu, etc.

8. Double **e** (**ee**) occurs in some words. Each *e* is sounded. Ex.: **lee, cree.**

9. Final unaccented **e** is shortened in sound like *ai* in *said*. Ex.: **vase** (**va-sè**, not **va-say**).

10. Before **n** and **r**, ending a syllable,

e sounds like *ai* in *fair*. Ex.: **comer, romper, gobernar.**

o sounds like *o* in *long*. Ex.: **el humor, el honor, la honra.**

11. **U**, when *sounded* before another vowel *in the same syllable*, is like the English *w* in *way*. Ex.: **agua** = **a-gwa**, **bueno** = **bwe-no**, **Guánica** = **Gwá-ni-ca** (*not* **a goo-a**, **boo-e-no**, **Goo-á-ni-ca**). In **gradúe** = **gra-doo-e**, because *u* and *e* are *not* in the same syllable (see 46).

12. **Y** is a vowel when it stands alone or at the end of a word. Ex.: **y, ley, rey.**

CONSONANTS

13. The consonants are b, c, ch, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, ll, m, n, ñ, p, q, r, rr, s, t, v, w, x, (y,) z.

14. **B** is almost like the English *b*, but the lips are not pressed together in sounding the Spanish *b*. Owing to this, *b* and *v* sound very much alike and are often mistaken one for the other: Spanish *Habana* is written and pronounced in English *Havana*. Ex.: bomba, bonito, débil, débito.

15. **C** has two distinct sounds.

1. Before *e* or *i* it has the strong sound of *th* in *thin*. Ex.: cita, cena, Ponce.

2. In all other situations except *ch*, it has the sound of *k*. Ex.: cabo, alcoba, cubo, electro.

3. **Qu** takes the place of *c* before *e* or *i* to give the sound of *k*. Ex.: tocar, toque, chico, chiquito.

16. **Cc** occurs only before *e* or *i*; hence in accordance with the preceding rule it has the sound of *kth*. Ex.: accesible, dicción.

17. **Ch** has the sound of *ch* in *church*. Ex.: chulo, china, chico, chisme. *Ch* usually follows *c* in the dictionary.

18. **D** has the soft sound of *th* in *then*; especially between vowels, and before *r*. At the end of a word it approximates the sound of *t*. Ex.: vivido, hablado, Madrid.

19. **F, k, l, m, n, p, t,** have the same sound as in English. Ex.: feble, kilómetro, luna, mano, notable, pena, tocado.

20. **G** has two distinct sounds.

1. Before *e* or *i* it is a palatal guttural like *ch* in the German *ich*. Ex.: general, gengibre, San Germán.

2. In all other situations, it is hard like *g* in *go*. Ex.: gato, goma, gusano.

3. To make *g* hard before *e* or *i*, *u* must be inserted between them. The *u* is not sounded. Ex.: gueta, guincha, guindo, gueltre, Aguinaldo.

4. If necessary to sound the *u* of *gue*, *gui*, a diaeresis (¨) must be placed over it. Ex.: vergüenza, averigüéis, argüir, Mayagüez.

21. **H** is always silent except before *ue*, in which case it has the sound of *h* in *hole*. Ex.: hablar, hambre, huevo, hueso.

22. **J** is always a strong guttural produced by depressing the chin and clearing the throat, causing the soft palate to vibrate. Ex.: jota, junta, jamás.

1. In reloj, pronounced reló, *j* is silent. In the plural it is sounded, relojes.

23. **Ll** has the sound of *lli* in *William*. Ex.: llorar, llevar, Agoncillo, silla. It follows *l* in the dictionary.

24. **Nm** takes the place of *mm* in English words. Ex.: *immersion* = inmersión.

25. **Nn** occurs in some words, each *n* being sounded. Ex.: ennegrecer.

26. **Ñ** sounds like *gn* in *mignonette*. Ex.: año, leña, otoño. It follows *n* in the dictionary.

NOTE: This mark (~) is called *tilde* in Spanish.

27. **Q** occurs only before *ue* or *ui*. *Qu* is then equal to *k* in sound. Ex.: que, qui, querido, quiero. The English sound of *qu* in *quart* is represented in Spanish by *cu*. Ex.: cuanto, cuarto.

28. **R** has the sound of *r* in English; but at the beginning and end of words and after *l*, *n*, *s*, it is slightly rolled. Ex.: roto, hablar, alrededor, Enrique, ara.

29. **Rr**, each *r* is distinctly sounded, thus producing a strong roll. Ex.: perro, ferrocarril, error.

30. **S** always has the hissing sound of *s* in *sun*. Ex.: su, se, solo, son.

31. **V** is like the English *v*, except that the upper teeth are not firmly pressed against the lower lip; owing to this, *v* and *b* sound very much alike, and are often mistaken one for the other. Ex.: vara, vela, visto, votos.

32. **W** imitates the sound it has in the language from which the word is taken, for, like *k*, it is used only in foreign words. Ex.: Wáldersee, West Point (*pronounced* Váldersee, Uest Point).

33. **X** has the sound of *x* in *wax* (*waks*). Ex.: sexo, extran-

gero, extremo. In older Spanish *x* was guttural, but *j* now takes the place of guttural *x*. Ex.: Méjico.

34. **Y** is a consonant when it begins a syllable; it then has the sound of *y* in *you*. Ex.: leyes, reyes, Cayo, Arroyo.

35. **Z** always has the strong sound of *th* in *thin*. Ex.: zeta, zapador, haz, zanja, Luzón, Múñoz, Martínez.

EXERCISES

SIMPLE VOWELS AND CONSONANTS

NOTE: In the following words, if a vowel has an accent (′) over it, lengthen that vowel If there is no accent (′) over any vowel and if the word ends in a vowel or *n*, *s*, lengthen the vowel in the syllable next to the last; but if the word ends in *y* or a consonant not *n*, *s*, lengthen the vowel in the last syllable. The syllable that is lengthened should always be a little higher in pitch than the others.

36. Amo, aya, toro, tela, vive, luna, uno, cuyo, niña, vine, ley, rey, otro, tintero, amigo, amputar, capa, escabeche, modista, mogote, purismo, santidad, gobernador, triste, humanidad, berlina, encorvar, encorvada, todos, usted, cañón, rifle, pistola, grano, hacha, cruz, caballo, cenceño, cepita, comiste, hablaste, corromper, proveer, yacer, asen, asgan, bóveda, conozco, muchísimo, chiche, chiquito, cigarra, ciclo, cigüeño, cincho, certificado, dolor de cabeza, fechar, filosofador, garganta, girofina, glanduloso, gerifalte, gitano, gorgojoso, gorro, guzmanes, gutural, borracho, guindilla, guerrilla, guedejudo, hombre, hocico, juez, juzgado, joya, judas, jarapote, reloj, giralda, gesticular, liguilla, libertadamente, lucir, llovido, llevadero, conmigo, chiquirritín, motín, motines, motilón, motilones, ennoblecer, quemar, querellarse, quintañón, quiromántico, santazo, sanmigueleño, sampsuquino, expansivo, extrañamente, próximo, contrahaz, contrabandista, azucena, revólver, tipográfico, cloroformo, característico, sinopsis, aproches, virulento, enfermiza, cable, capitán, soldado, cabo, sargento, coronel, ejército, electrómetro, ellos, vosotras, ustedes, gramática, adjetivo, nombre, pronombre, castellana, ejemplos, hija, sílabas, acento, culebrazo, damnificador, desasosegadamente, música, mojiganga, regocijadamente, segundogénito, sencillez, villancejo, yasquero, zipizape, Malate, Malolos, Quebradillas, Manila, Luneta, Fajardo, Culebra, Manzanillo, Filipinos.

DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS

37. The strong vowels are, *a*, *o*, *e*; the weak vowels are *i* (*y*), *u*.

NOTE: *y* takes the place of *i* at the end of a word.

38. A diphthong is a combination of a strong vowel with a weak vowel or of two weak vowels with each other, counting as a *single* syllable, although each vowel has its own individual sound.

39. A triphthong is a combination of a strong vowel between two weak vowels, counting as a *single* syllable, although each vowel has its own individual sound.

40. In a diphthong or triphthong, the strong vowel is pitched a little higher than the weak and is prolonged at the expense of the weak vowel or vowels. If the diphthong consists of two weak vowels, *it is always the last one* that is prolonged.

41. Two strong vowels coming together count as *two* syllables. Ex.: a|e, a|o, o|e, e|o, e|a, o|a.

trae, maestro, aecho, acaece; nao, rao, aova, aojo; toesa, moeda, roer, poeta; meneo, deseo, veo, trineo; océano, zea, lea, sean, aspeado; boa, boato, poa, roano; zee, lee, roo, zoofito, Humacao, Mindanao, Coamo, guineo.

DIPHTHONGS. (Strong and weak vowels)

42. 1. ai, ay, au, ia, ua; oi, oy, ou, io, uo; ei, ey, eu, ie, ue.

aire, hay, paraiso, caiga; pausa, aun, causar; aliviado, rociada, biasa, piache; cuando, cuatro, Juan, mengua; zoilo, oigo, oidor, hoy, soy, voy, doy; bou, toucán, coutelina; Dios, biombo, diobre; fatuo, duodeno; aceite, reino, reír; rey, bey, dey; deuda, feudar, viene, tiempo, nadie, efigie; nuevo, pues, puerto, bueno, Cayey, Siboney, Jauco, Yauco, Santiago, Guanajay, El Caney, Cauto.

DIPHTHONGS. (Two weak vowels)

2. iu, ui, uy.

viudo, ciudad, diurno; zuiza, fuir, huimos, ruido; muy.

TRIPHTHONGS

43. iai, iei, uai, uay, uei, uey.

variáis, variéis, averiguáis, averigüéis, Paraguay, Uruguay, buey, Chiluey.

NOTE: The vowels in the order of sonorousness are *a*, *o*, *e*, *i*, *u*; so that the division into strong and weak is not arbitrary but natural.

It is belived by some that unless a diphthong or triphthong gets the tonic accent each vowel is of exactly the same length. Ex.: baile, bailarín.

In the first case, *a* is prolonged at the expense of *i*, because bai gets the tonic accent; whereas in the second case, since the tonic accent is not on bai, it is claimed that *a* and *i* are of exactly the same length. This might be the case if the division into strong and weak vowels were arbitrary; but being a natural division, based upon the organs of speech, diphthongs and triphthongs should always be pronounced more or less the same way, whether they get the tonic accent or not.

THE WRITTEN OR GRAPHIC ACCENT

44. The graphic accent (′) indicates to the eye the fact that the word over which it appears is an exception to one of the two general laws of Spanish pronunciation, or else it shows that the word is used with exceptional meaning.

These laws are:

1. Words of more than one syllable ending in a vowel (except *y*), or in a diphthong, or either of the consonants, *n*, *s*, have the tonic accent on the next to the last syllable. Ex.: amigo, ventana, hablan, reyes, porque, seria, nadie.

2. Words of more than one syllable ending in *y*, or in any consonant except *n* or *s*, have the tonic accent on the last syllable. Ex.: estoy, Paraguay, hablar, comed, mortal.

45. If the word is not pronounced in accordance with the above laws, a graphic accent must be used to indicate which syllable gets the tonic accent. Ex.: rincón, huérfano, Andrés.

46. If the syllable requiring the graphic accent is a diphthong or a triphthong, the graphic accent must be placed over the strong vowel, or over the last of two weak ones. Ex.: piélago, después, cáustico.

But, if the Spaniard pronounces the word (consult Spanish dictionary) with the tonic accent on any other vowel, the

graphic accent must appear, of course, over such vowel, thus dissolving the diphthong or triphthong into two syllables. Ex.: leído, gradúe, días, bahía.

47. The following monosyllables are always written with a graphic accent:

1. The preposition *á* and the conjunctions *é*, *ó*, *ú*.

2. Monosyllabic forms of verbs in the Past Definite. Ex.: fuí, fué, dí, dió, ví, vió, etc.

3. The more emphatic one of two monosyllables of identical form. Ex.: él, *he*, el, *the*; más, *more*, mas, *but*; tú, *thou*, tu, *thy*.

48. The graphic accent is used to distinguish between the uses of the same word in different meanings. Ex.: sólo, *only*, solo, *alone*; qué? *what?* que, *that*; cómo? *how?* como, *as*; bájo, *I go down*, bajo, *under*.

49. The graphic accent is used in certain correlatives: cuáles . . . cuáles.

NOTE: The graphic accent over the *i* does away with the dot, *í*. The initial letter of a sentence, although a capital, takes the graphic accent when necessary. Ex.: Á decir verdad, no puedo comer.

50. The foregoing is the method of using the graphic accent adopted by the Royal Spanish Academy in 1888. Up to that time *n* and *s* had been considered as consonants; by this system, they are considered as vowels, *for purposes of written accentuation.*

SYLLABICATION

51. A single consonant between two vowels always goes with the following vowel to form a syllable: ca-sa, me-sa, a-mor, flu-xión.

52. The letters *ch*, *ll*, *ñ* and *rr* are considered as simple consonants: chi-co, ca-lle, ni-ño, tie-rra.

53. Generally two or three consonants between vowels are separated; the first one belonging to the preceding syllable: con-ten-to, in-mer-sión, ac-ción, en-no-ble-cer.

54. Diphthongs and triphthongs are indivisible: bue-no, la-bo-rio-so, a-ve-ri-güéis, ver-güen-za, a-ve-ri-guáis.

CAPITALS AND PUNCTUATION

55. Capitals are used as in English.

Él es Juan. Quiero estar en París.

56. The following are exceptions:

1. The names of the days of the week and of the months of the year:

January, *enero*, June, *junio*, August, *agosto;* Monday, *lunes*, Saturday, *sábado*, Sunday, *domingo*.

2. Proper adjectives:

El libro francés, *the French book;* el comerciante alemán, *the German merchant.*

But el Francés, *the Frenchman*, el Alemán, *the German*.

3. The pronoun *yo*, unless it begins a sentence or introduces a direct quotation:

Yo estoy aquí. Él ha dicho: "Yo tengo dinero." ¿Qué he dicho yo?

57. Rules for punctuation are the same as in English, except that interrogative and exclamatory sentences require in addition an inverted mark at the beginning (¿) (¡) unless the sentence commences with an interrogative pronoun or adverb, which, always having an accent, will indicate sufficiently the kind of sentence. This, however, is not always followed, and it is always correct to use the two marks in any interrogative or exclamatory sentence. Ex.: ¿Quiere V. este libro? Qué tienes, Juanito? Qué lástima! ¡Ay de mí!

GENERAL EXERCISES

DIPHTHONGS, TRIPHTHONGS, AND TWO STRONG VOWELS

58. Aire, airoso, cantáis, hay, causa, caudal, heroico, voy, soy, sois, bou, rey, reinado, veis, feudo, eunuco, lluvia, diablo, cual, agua, aprobación, nación, cuota, mutuo, fiel, nieto, nadie, pues, fuego, pueril, ciudad, viudo, muy, cuidado, cuita. Cambiáis, variéis, fraguáis, guay, santiguéis, buey, país, aún, oído, leí, armonía, período, confíe, falúa, continúo, continúe, flúido, día, tío, dúo, leído, caída. Caer, traemos, aecho, aéreo, aerómetro, aoristo,

aovado, oenas, oeste, oenate, eólico, veo, leo, ea pues! marea, galantea, cojea, bautismo, toreador, canoa, canoero, canói, canoíta, guardia, faccioso, droguería, juez, creeré, reunir, héroe, cuadro, cuaderno, cuestión, cuestiones, matigüelo, parihuela, sanguisuela, sangüeso, excepción, argüimos, cuesta, recuerdo, hierro, suelo, sueño, yuxtaposición, conmociones, güepil, relampaguea, meajuela, piernas, agonía, debió, menguada, cuotidiano, melifluo, zuizón, mausoleo, toalla, meaúca, mauseolo, Vizcaino, Camagüeyano, Nicaragüense, caracteres, regímenes, téngase, buitre, andamio, ganzúa, cigüeña, cazuela, cuidadoso, tortuoso, imbuido, Escorial, majuelo, Malagueño, matrimonio, narración, ocurrencia, cuarenta, curioso, distraído, Guipuzcoano, Leonés, idioma, ingeniero, leudo, juicio, monstruo, revuelto, tejuelo, santiguarse, viajero, lisonjean, aeronautas, titubeó, bailadores, pies, avergüenzo, aguardo, salteador, náufrago, hubiésemos, mareado, oigo, usario, albaceazgo, votación, Sierra Maestra, Guayama, Aibonito, Utuardo, Vieques, Cienfuegos, Chihuahua, Puerto Rico, Puertoriqueña.

READING

NOTE: Spanish vowels coming together, whether in the same or different words, are sounded with a smooth glide of the voice from one to the other, without the distinct separation made in sounding the vowels in English words. Ex.: Mi‿amigo‿está‿aquí.

LA HERMANA DE LA CARIDAD

59. "—Óyeme, y pásmate, Eduardo. Yo he visto aquí, un ministro poderoso, dueño de la voluntad del rey, caer en desgracia. La gente lo sabía, y él lo ignoraba. Un baile fué la señal de su desgracia. La reina acostumbraba á bailar todas las noches de sarao el primer rigodón con él: la noche destinada á herirle, no lo bailó. Apartáronse de él los cortesanos como si estuviera apestado; riéronse de su catadura los mismos que le prestaban homenaje; encontróse en aquellos salones donde todas las frentes, hasta las frentes coronadas, le acataban, solo, aislado, sin un amigo. Su desgracia creció, y un día se vió preso, y otro próximo al cadalso, y hoy anda acaso en tierra extraña, pidiendo una miserable limosna para mantener á sus hijos.

—¿Y nosotros podemos temer eso mismo?

—Podemos, debemos temer más, no lo dudes.

—Nos iremos á un país extraño.

—No te dejarán.

—Pero, dijo Eduardo mirando el reloj, aún no es hora, no, ni con mucho, de que venga.

—¡Oh! ¡Si no viniera, Dios mío; si no viniera, como he oído susurrar á mis enemigos por los jardines! . . .

Y Margarita se pasaba la mano con delirio por la frente, como para alejar una sombra.

Tanta era su preocupación, que se había olvidado de Ángela. Su ambición eclipsaba su amor. Sin embargo, muy grande era el peligro, cuando ella, que tanto se acordaba siempre de sus rivales, y que tanto se complacía en martirizar á Eduardo, no le echaba en cara irónicamente, como de costumbre, la dramática escena de Ángela. Margarita vivía en la tempestad por el ruído de las grandes pasiones, por la adoración de las gentes, por la grandeza de su casa, por su poder, por todas esas cualidades prestadas que eran el secreto maravilloso de su fortuna y de sus placeres. Todo aquel dorado castillo podía caer en una hora, en un momento podía destruirse con un solo soplo.

Y para el sér que está acostumbrado á respirar el aliento de la tempestad; para el que vive en medio de las encrespadas pasiones; para el que no tiene más luz que la luz que despiden todos los sentimientos exaltados; para ese sér, ciertamente, separarse de tal atmósfera, vivir, agitarse en otros horizontes más solitarios ó más tranquilos, equivale á la muerte. Esos seres, que buscan el ruído, el estrépito, la tempestad, la lucha, y quieren vivir siempre luchando y combatiendo, no tienen idea alguna de la felicidad."

E. Castelar.

SPANISH-AMERICAN PRONUNCIATION

60. The Spanish-American countries are CUBA, PUERTO RICO, GUAM, the PHILIPPINE ISLANDS, Mexico, Central America, Venezuela, Argentina, and the Western Republics of South America.

61. Spanish *as spoken* in Spanish-American countries differs from pure Castilian in the following respects:

1. { *C* before *e* and *i*, and / *Z* in all cases } have the sound of *s*.

Constitución, pronounced *constitusión*; zozobra, pronounced *sosobra*; azucena, pronounced *asusena*.

2. *D* in the *ending* ado, is silent: hablado, pronounced *ablao*.

NOTE: *D* in the ending *ido* should never be silent: comido, *never pronounced* comío.

3. *ll* is like *y* in *you*: caballo, pronounced *cabayo*; millón, pronounced *miyón*.

NOTE: In Spanish-American pronunciation we also find that

1. *gu* before *a* and *o* is pronounced like *w*: agua, pronounced *awa*; antiguo, pronounced *antiwo*.

2. *b* before *ue* is silent: bueno, pronounced *weno*.

3. In certain localities *g* and *b* are interchangeable before *ue*: bueno = *güeno*.

4. *es* is generally used for *ex* when followed by a consonant not h: *escelente* = excelente.

In Spanish-American spelling,

5. *y* is seldom used as a vowel: *rei* will usually be found instead of *rey*.

6. *g* is seldom used as a guttural; *jeneral* will usually be found instead of *general*.

62. In Spanish-America there is frequently confusion in the use of the graphic accent; hence care must be exercised, especially in the pronunciation of proper names of persons and places. The following are examples of words that are rarely found written with the graphic accent: Gómez, García, Las Guásimas, Guantánamo, Macías, Cárdenas.

The foregoing Spanish-American pronunciation is also heard throughout Southern Spain and even in Castile. In dignified discourse, however, pure Castilian is used.

THE SPANISH VERB

CLASSIFICATION OF SPANISH VERBS

63. With respect to their form, Spanish verbs are divided into regular, irregular, and defective verbs.

1. Regular verbs are those which follow the model verbs throughout.

2. Irregular verbs are those which deviate more or less from the model verbs.

3. Defective verbs are those which are lacking in some of the persons or tenses.

64. With respect to their signification and use, Spanish verbs are divided into:

1. Auxiliary verbs, which assist in the conjugation of other verbs.

2. Active or transitive verbs, which take a direct object.

3. Neuter or intransitive verbs, which do not take a direct object, the action being complete in itself.

4. Passive verbs, which are formed from active verbs by making the direct object of the active verb the subject of the passive verb.

5. Pronominal verbs, which have an objective pronoun that represents the same person or thing as the subject of the verb.

6. Impersonal verbs, which have neither subject nor object, and usually refer to some phenomena of nature; they are conjugated only in the infinitive, present and past participles, and in the third person singular of the other moods and tenses.

The Three Conjugations

65. 1. All Spanish verbs end in *ar*, *er* or *ir*, thus giving rise to three large groups of verbs called conjugations.

Verbs ending in *ar*, as *hablar*, to speak, belong to the first conjugation.

Verbs ending in *er*, as *comer*, to eat, belong to the second conjugation.

Verbs ending in *ir*, as *vivir*, to live, belong to the third conjugation.

2. The conjugation of a verb is a regular arrangement of its moods, tenses, persons, and numbers.

3. In Spanish there are the same persons and numbers as in English and in French.

66. In Spanish all verbs except defective verbs are conjugated in the following moods and tenses:

INFINITIVE MOOD

Present Infinitive. Past Participle.
Present Participle.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Tenses:

Present.
Imperfect.
Past Definite.
Future.
Conditional (consequent clause).

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Tenses:

Present.
Imperfect (first form).
Imperfect (second form).
Future.
Conditional (antecedent or *if* clause).

IMPERATIVE MOOD

Present Tense.

This arrangement of moods and tenses has been adopted as being the one best calculated to give the learner a proper understanding of the uses of the moods and tenses of a Spanish verb. It is not the arrangement that is given in all Spanish grammars.

ON THE USE OF THE TENSES

67. The following remarks on the use of these moods and tenses will be found of assistance. They should be carefully read over in connection with the conjugations of *haber* and the model verbs and the respective translations noted.

Infinitive Mood

68. 1. The present infinitive corresponds to the French and English infinitive.

2. The present participle corresponds to the French and English present participle.

3. The past participle corresponds to the French and English past participle, and is used to form the compound tenses.

Indicative Mood

69. 1. The indicative mood corresponds to the French and English indicative.

2. The present tense is used exactly like the present in French and English, and translates the three forms, — the absolute, the emphatic, and the progressive; e.g., 'I speak,' 'I do speak,' 'I am speaking.'

3. The imperfect tense corresponds to the French imperfect, and translates the progressive and the customary past; e.g., 'I was speaking' or 'I used to speak.'

4. The past definite corresponds to the French past definite and like the latter is the favorite tense for historical narration.

5. The future and the conditional correspond to the French future and conditional and to the English *shall* and *should* respectively.

Subjunctive Mood

70. 1. The subjunctive mood in Spanish, just as in French, expresses doubt, desire, necessity or emotion, and is used in a clause *dependent* on a verb expressing one of these ideas. In other words, the rules governing the subjunctive in Spanish are, with one or two exceptions, practically the same as in French.

2. The arrangement of the tenses, side by side with those of the indicative mood, followed in this verb book, is not at all necessary, and is made merely for convenience.

3. The present subjunctive in Spanish is used very nearly as the present subjunctive in French is used; that is, to express present or future time with reference to a verb in the principal proposition, in the present or future indicative or in the imperative.

4. The imperfect subjunctive, either form (preference being given to the form in *se*), is used very nearly as the imperfect subjunctive in French is used; that is, to express present or future time with reference to a verb in some past tense in the principal proposition.

5. The fact that there are two forms in the imperfect subjunctive need not be confusing, for we have in English the same two forms. We may say in English, 'if I had' or 'if I should have,' which mean exactly the same thing and correspond precisely to the forms in Spanish, *si hubiese* and *si hubiera.*

6. The future subjunctive is a tense that does not occur in French or English. We have, however, some equivalent to it in English: we may say, 'if I go' or 'if I shall go'; the former being the more frequent and conversational, the latter the more literary. So in Spanish, the future subjunctive is a literary tense and is supplanted almost entirely by the present subjunctive at the present day, except where necessary to expressly refer to some future contingency, e.g., 'When he has finished, he will write,' *Cuando hubiere concluido escribirá.*

7. The conditional subjunctive is placed beside the conditional indicative merely for the convenience of the student, and is nothing more than the imperfect subjunctive, either form, used in an *if*-clause (antecedent); the resulting proposition (conse-

quent clause) requiring the conditional indicative. There is this great difference between Spanish and French: *if* (except when used with a present tense) requires the subjunctive in Spanish, whereas in French it requires the indicative.

The Spanish usage is the same as in English: 'If I had (or should have) gone, I should have seen,' *si hubiese* (or *hubiera*) *ido, habría visto.*

Imperative Mood

71. 1. The imperative mood is the mood of command; and, as a command can be given only to a person directly addressed, the *true imperative* in Spanish exists only in the second person singular and plural.

2. To take the place of the first and third persons singular and plural, lacking in the imperative *affirmative*, the corresponding persons and numbers of the present subjunctive are employed optatively.

3. It is a noticeable peculiarity, however, that in the imperative *negative*, the *second* persons singular and plural are *also* taken from the present subjunctive; so that in the imperative negative all the verb forms are exactly the same as the verb forms of the same persons and numbers of the present subjunctive. On account of this confusing peculiarity, the imperative affirmative and negative are given for all verbs.

4. The imperative mood is always in the present tense with reference to any time, past, present or future; e.g., 'I should have said, speak!' 'I said to him, speak!' 'I say to him, speak!' 'I shall say to him, speak!' 'I shall have said to him, speak!'

5. The verb *haber*, being at present used only as an auxiliary verb, has no imperative, although some old forms survive from its former use as an active verb.

NOTE: See *haber*, impersonal, p. 99.

GENERAL REMARKS ON THE FORMATION OF VERBS

72. 1. As already stated, the infinitive always ends in *ar*, *er* or *ir*.

2. The present participle of all verbs ends in *ndo*, corresponding to the French ending *ant* and to the English ending *ing*; *ando* for verbs in *ar*, *iendo* for verbs in *er* and *ir*.

3. The past participle ends in *do*: *ado* for verbs in *ar*, *ido* for verbs in *er* and *ir*.

Indicative Mood

73. 1. Notice first the omission of all pronoun subjects, wherein Spanish differs from French and English. The inflectional endings indicate the person, number, tense and mood; the pronoun subjects are therefore not used unless necessary for emphasis or to avoid ambiguity occasioned by certain verb-forms being the same for different persons or tenses. This dropping of pronoun subjects may occur in English in certain cases; as, 'Hast heard the news?' 'Wilt come to-morrow?' etc. This, the great exception in English, is the rule in Spanish. In the conjugations of the model verbs the pronoun subjects have been inserted to familiarize the student with them and the corresponding verb forms.

74. 1. *Present Tense:* The ending *s* is characteristic of the second person singular of the present indicative, in fact of all second persons singular except the imperative affirmative and the past definite.

2. The ending *mos* is characteristic of the first person plural in all moods and tenses, and corresponds to the ending *ons* in French.

3. The ending *is* is characteristic of the second person plural in all the moods and tenses except the imperative affirmative, and corresponds to the ending *es* in French.

4. The ending *n* is characteristic of the third person plural in all the moods and tenses and corresponds to the ending *nt* in French.

75. *Imperfect Tense:* The ending *ía* is characteristic of the imperfect indicative (except for verbs in *ar*, in which the ending is *aba*) and of the conditional indicative, and corresponds to the ending *ais* in the French imperfect and conditional.

76. *Past Definite Tense:* The endings *iste*, *isteis*, second person singular and plural, are characteristic of verbs in *er* and *ir*; for verbs in *ar*, they become *aste*, *asteis*.

77. *Future Tense:* This tense is formed by adding to the full infinitive form the endings of the present indicative of *haber*, which makes the tense mean literally, 'I have to do,' so and so. 'I shall do it'; exactly as in the French future.

78. *Conditional Tense:* This tense is formed by adding the endings of the imperfect indicative of *haber* to the full indicative form, which makes the tense literally mean, 'I had to do' so and so. 'I should do it' *if* something else happened, exactly as in the French conditional.

Subjunctive Mood

79. 1. *Present Tense:* The vowel *a* of the ending in the present subjunctive is characteristic of all verbs in *er* and *ir;* for verbs in *ar* the characteristic vowel of the ending is *e*. This tense can, in almost all Spanish verbs, be obtained by taking the first person singular present indicative, and changing the ending *o* to *a* or *e*.

Note again *s*, *mos*, *is* and *n* as characteristic endings of the respective persons and numbers, as explained under the indicative mood.

2. All the remaining tenses of the subjunctive are formed in every verb in Spanish without exception from the third person plural of the past definite, by changing the ending *ron* into *ra*, *ras*, *ra*, *ramos*, *rais*, *ran*, for the imperfect subjunctive, first form; *se*, *ses*, *se*, *semos*, *seis*, *sen*, for the imperfect subjunctive, second form; *re*, *res*, *re*, *remos*, *reis*, *ren*, for the future subjunctive.

Imperative Mood

80. 1. The second person singular is always the same as the third person singular of the present indicative, except in eight verbs: *haber*, *poner*, *tener*, *valer*, *decir*, *ir*, *venir*, *salir*.

2. The second person plural is *always* obtained directly from the infinitive by changing the final letter *r* into *d*.

3. The other persons, as before stated, are all present subjunctive, with subject placed after.

4. The pronoun subject, *when expressed*, always stands after the verb.

81. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB **HABER** = TO HAVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE	PRESENT PARTICIPLE	PAST PARTICIPLE
haber, to have.	**habiendo,** having.	**habido,** had.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**he**	I have (do have, am having)
tú	**has**	thou hast
él	**ha**	he has
V.	**ha**	your honor has
nosotros	**hemos**	we have
vosotros	**habéis**	ye have
ellos	**han**	they have
VV.	**han**	your honors have

Imperfect

yo	**había**	I was having *or* used to have
tú	**habías**	thou wast having *or* used to have
él	**había**	he was having *or* used to have
V.	**había**	your honor was having *or* used to have
nosotros	**habíamos**	we were having *or* used to have
vosotros	**habíais**	ye were having *or* used to have
ellos	**habían**	they were having *or* used to have
VV.	**habían**	your honors were having *or* used to have

Past Definite

yo	**hube**	I had
tú	**hubiste**	thou hadst
él	**hubo**	he had
V.	**hubo**	your honor had
nosotros	**hubimos**	we had
vosotros	**hubisteis**	ye had
ellos	**hubieron**	they had
VV.	**hubieron**	your honors had

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**haya**	that I have *or* may have
tú	**hayas**	that thou have *or* mayst have
él	**haya**	that he have *or* may have
V.	**haya**	that your honor have *or* may have
nosotros	**hayamos**	that we have *or* may have
vosotros	**hayáis**	that ye have *or* may have
ellos	**hayan**	that they have *or* may have
VV.	**hayan**	that your honors have *or* may have

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**hubiera**	that I should have *or* had
tú	**hubieras**	that thou shouldst have *or* hadst
él	**hubiera**	that he should have *or* had
V.	**hubiera**	that your honor should have *or* had
nosotros	**hubiéramos**	that we should have *or* had
vosotros	**hubierais**	that ye should have *or* had
ellos	**hubieran**	that they should have *or* had
VV.	**hubieran**	that your honors should have *or* had

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**hubiese**	that I had *or* should have
tú	**hubieses**	that thou hadst *or* shouldst have
él	**hubiese**	that he had *or* should have
V.	**hubiese**	that your honor had *or* should have
nosotros	**hubiésemos**	that we had *or* should have
vosotros	**hubieseis**	that ye had *or* should have
ellos	**hubiesen**	that they had *or* should have
VV.	**hubiesen**	that your honors had *or* should have

Future				*Future*		
yo	**habré**	I shall have	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	yo **hubiere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I have *or* shall have
tú	**habrás**	thou wilt have		tú **hubieres**		thou have *or* shalt have
él	**habrá**	he will have		él **hubiere**		he have *or* shall have
V.	**habrá**	your honor will have		V. **hubiere**		your honor have *or* shall have
nosotros	**habremos**	we shall have		nosotros **hubiéremos**		we have *or* shall have
vosotros	**habréis**	ye will have		vosotros **hubiereis**		ye have *or* shall have
ellos	**habrán**	they will have		ellos **hubieren**		they have *or* shall have
VV.	**habrán**	your honors will have		VV. **hubieren**		your honors have *or* shall have

Conditional (Consequent)				*Conditional (Antecedent)*		
yo	**habría**	I should have	si	yo **hubiera** *or* **hubiese**	if	I should have *or* had
tú	**habrías**	thou wouldst have		tú **hubieras** *or* **hubieses**		thou shouldst have *or* hadst
él	**habría**	he would have		él **hubiera** *or* **hubiese**		he should have *or* had
V.	**habría**	your honor would have		V. **hubiera** *or* **hubiese**		your honor should have *or* had
nosotros	**habríamos**	we should have		nosotros **hubiéramos** *or* **hubiésemos**		we should have *or* had
vosotros	**habríais**	ye would have		vosotros **hubierais** *or* **hubieseis**		ye should have *or* had
ellos	**habrían**	they would have		ellos **hubieran** *or* **hubiesen**		they should have *or* had
VV.	**habrían**	your honors would have		VV. **hubieran** *or* **hubiesen**		your honors should have *or* had

REGULAR VERBS

Terminations of the Three Conjugations

82. 1. The verbs *hablar*, to speak, *comer*, to eat, *vivir*, to live, have been selected as the model verbs of the respective conjugations.

2. By taking away the infinitive endings, *ar*, *er* and *ir*, we get the stem of the verb, *habl-*, *com-*, *viv-*.

3. The different moods, tenses, persons and numbers are formed by adding certain *inflectional endings*, fixed for each conjugation, to the *stem* of the verb; except in the future and the conditional indicative, where they are added directly to the full infinitive itself.

4. These fixed inflectional endings for the three conjugations are as follows:

	First Conjugation	Second Conjugation	Third Conjugation
Infinitive	-ar	-er	-ir
Present Participle	-ando	-iendo	-iendo
Past Participle	-ado	-ido	-ido
Present Indicative	-o -as -a -amos -áis -an	-o -es -e -emos -éis -en	-o -es -e -imos -ís -en
Imperfect Indicative	-aba -abas -aba -abamos -abais -aban	-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían
Past Definite Indicative	-é -aste -ó -amos -asteis -aron	-í -iste -ió -imos -isteis -ieron	-í -iste -ió -imos -isteis -ieron
Future Indicative	-é -ás -á -emos -éis -án	-é -ás -á -emos -éis -án	-é -ás -á -emos -éis -án
Conditional Indicative	-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían	-ía -ías -ía -íamos -íais -ían
Present Subjunctive	-e -es -e -emos -éis -en	-a -as -a -amos -áis -an	-a -as -a -amos -áis -an

	First Conjugation -ar	Second Conjugation -er	Third Conjugation -ir
Imperfect Subjunctive First Form	-ara -aras -ara -áramos -arais -aran	-iera -ieras -iera -iéramos -ierais -ieran	-iera -ieras -iera -iéramos -ierais -ieran
Imperfect Subjunctive Second Form	-ase -ases -ase -ásemos -aseis -asen	-iese -ieses -iese -iésemos -ieseis -iesen	-iese -ieses -iese -iésemos -ieseis -iesen
Future Subjunctive	-are -ares -are -áremos -areis -aren	-iere -ieres -iere -iéremos -iereis -ieren	-iere -ieres -iere -iéremos -iereis -ieren
Imperative Mood	– -a – – -ad –	– -e – – -ed –	– -e – – -id –

83. From the above it will be apparent:

1. That the endings in the second and third conjugations differ only in the first and second persons plural of the present indicative, and in the second person plural of the imperative.

2. That in all the conjugations the inflectional endings of the first and third persons singular are identical in the imperfect and the conditional tenses of the indicative mood, and also in all the tenses of the subjunctive; hence when ambiguity arises in these cases the pronoun subject, first or third person, must be employed.

3. That in the first and third conjugations the form of the verb in the first person plural of the present indicative and of the past definite is the same. The context must determine the tense intended.

4. In all other cases of like spelling the graphic accent determines the tense.

84. CONJUGATION OF THE MODEL VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **hablar,** to speak. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **hablando,** speaking

PAST PARTICIPLE: **hablado,** spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**hablo**	I speak (do speak, am speaking)
tú	**hablas**	thou speakest
él	**habla**	he speaks
V.	**habla**	your honor speaks
nosotros	**hablamos**	we speak
vosotros	**habláis**	ye speak
ellos	**hablan**	they speak
VV.	**hablan**	your honors speak

Imperfect

yo	**hablaba**	I was speaking	*or* used to speak.
tú	**hablabas**	thou wast speaking	
él	**hablaba**	he was speaking	
V.	**hablaba**	your honor was speaking	
nosotros	**hablábamos**	we were speaking	
vosotros	**hablabais**	ye were speaking	
ellos	**hablaban**	they were speaking	
VV.	**hablaban**	your honors were speaking	

Past Definite

yo	**hablé**	I spoke
tú	**hablaste**	thou did'st speak
él	**habló**	he spoke
V.	**habló**	your honor spoke
nosotros	**hablamos**	we spoke
vosotros	**hablasteis**	ye spoke
ellos	**hablaron**	they spoke
VV.	**hablaron**	your honors spoke

Future

yo	**hablaré**	I shall speak
tú	**hablarás**	thou wilt speak
él	**hablará**	he will speak
V.	**hablará**	your honor will speak
nosotros	**hablaremos**	we shall speak
vosotros	**hablaréis**	ye will speak
ellos	**hablarán**	they will speak
VV.	**hablarán**	your honors will speak

Conditional (Consequent)

yo	**hablaría**	I should speak
tú	**hablarías**	thou wouldst speak
él	**hablaría**	he would speak
V.	**hablaría**	your honor would speak
nosotros	**hablaríamos**	we should speak
vosotros	**hablaríais**	ye would speak
ellos	**hablarían**	they would speak
VV.	**hablarían**	your honors would speak

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**hable**	that I speak	*or* may speak, etc.
tú	**hables**	that thou speak	
él	**hable**	that he speak	
V.	**hable**	that your honor speak	
nosotros	**hablemos**	that we speak	
vosotros	**hableis**	that ye speak	
ellos	**hablen**	that they speak	
VV.	**hablen**	that your honors speak	

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**hablara**	that I should speak	*or* spoke.
tú	**hablaras**	that thou shouldst speak	
él	**hablara**	that he should speak	
V.	**hablara**	that your honor should speak	
nosotros	**habláramos**	that we should speak	
vosotros	**hablarais**	that ye should speak	
ellos	**hablaran**	that they should speak	
VV.	**hablaran**	that your honors should speak	

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**hablase**	that I spoke	*or* should speak, etc.
tú	**hablases**	that thou spoke	
él	**hablase**	that he spoke	
V.	**hablase**	that your honor spoke	
nosotros	**hablásemos**	that we spoke	
vosotros	**hablaseis**	that ye spoke	
ellos	**hablasen**	that they spoke	
VV.	**hablasen**	that your honors spoke	

Future

si, cuando mientras, aunque, etc.	yo	**hablare**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I speak	*or* shall speak, etc.
	tú	**hablares**		thou speak	
	él	**hablare**		he speak	
	V.	**hablare**		your honor speak	
	nosotros	**habláremos**		we speak	
	vosotros	**hablareis**		ye speak	
	ellos	**hablaren**		they speak	
	VV.	**hablaren**		your honors speak	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	yo	**hablara**	or **hablase**	if	I should speak
	tú,	**hablaras**	or **hablases**		thou shouldst speak
	él	**hablara**	or **hablase**		he should speak
	V.	**hablara**	or **hablase**		your honor should speak
	nosotros	**hablárамos**	or **hablásemos**		we should speak
	vosotros	**hablarais**	or **hablaseis**		ye should speak
	ellos	**hablaran**	or **hablasen**		they should speak
	VV.	**hablaran**	or **hablasen**		your honors should speak

or spoke.

IMPERATIVE MOOD

habla	tú	speak thou
hablad	vosotros	speak ye
hable	yo	let me speak
hable	él	let him speak
hable	V.	speak, your honor
hablemos	nosotros	let us speak
hablen	ellos	let them speak
hablen	VV.	speak, your honors

NOTE. — Having thus learned the conjugation of the model verb *hablar*, practice in making use of the inflectional endings should at once be entered upon by requiring the student to write out the complete conjugations of verbs selected from the list given below. This prevents his merely memorizing *hablar*, and makes him alert in using verbs that he has never seen written out.

Throughout the book, at the end of the numerous conjugations, will be found in each practicable case a group of verbs that are to be conjugated in the same manner. These groups should all be made use of as suggested for *hablar*.

Whenever verbs are written out, neither ditto marks (" ") nor horizontal bars should be used to avoid the repetition of the stem of the verb, since the whole value of the exercise consists in having the student constantly write out in full the expression he will have to make use of in speaking or writing the language.

Conjugate in the same manner:

alabar, to praise.	**montar**, to mount.	**quemar**, to burn.
casar, to marry.	**ordenar**, to order.	**robar**, to rob.
convidar, to invite.	**parar**, to stop.	**saltar**, to leap.
hallar, to find.	**pasar**, to pass.	**salvar**, to save.
levantar, to raise.	**pasear**, to walk.	**tomar**, to take.
matar, to kill.	**portar**, to carry.	**trabajar**, to work.
mirar, to look.	**preguntar**, to ask.	**tratar**, to treat.

REMARK. — At West Point it is the practice to treat the verb separately from the rest of the grammar and to give out lessons in it every day so as to cover the whole subject twice in the course of three months. In a section of ten cadets, seven are sent to the blackboard with grammar papers, while three recite on reading and translation. These three cadets are then sent to the blackboard to write out a complete verb in Spanish in the lesson of that day or the day before. Each cadet at the board with a grammar paper is likewise required to write out in full one or two tenses of the verb in the day's lesson. In all cases the cadets are required to read off the verb, paying particular attention to the pronunciation. As this process takes place every day, the cadet quickly learns that the verb is a subject he never can escape from, and he soon becomes expert in the most important part of the Spanish language.

THE COMPOUND TENSES

85. 1. The compound tenses of all verbs in Spanish are formed by means of the auxiliary verb *haber*.

2. By adding the past participle of a verb to any simple tense of *haber*, we get the corresponding compound tense of the verb.

3. The auxiliary should never, as a general rule, be separated from the past participle by any other word.

4. The past participle of any verb conjugated with *haber* never varies for gender or number; thus coinciding with English usage and being contrary to French usage.

5. A compound tense of the imperative, second person plural is sometimes met with, though so rarely that we may consider that mood as not having one.

6. The following are the compound tenses. Their use is practically the same as in French. Their corresponding use in English is apparent from the respective translations. In the text they will be indicated simply as compound present indicative, compound imperfect indicative, etc.

INFINITIVE MOOD

Compound Infinitive	*or*	Perfect Infinitive
Compound Present Participle	*or*	Perfect Participle

INDICATIVE MOOD

Tenses:

Compound Present	*or*	Past Indefinite
Compound Imperfect	*or*	Pluperfect
Compound Past Definite	*or*	Past Anterior
Compound Future	*or*	Future Perfect
Compound Conditional	*or*	Conditional Past

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Compound Present	*or*	Past Indefinite
Compound Imperfect (first form)	*or*	Pluperfect (first form)
Compound Imperfect (second form)	*or*	Pluperfect (second form)
Compound Future	*or*	Future Perfect
Compound Conditional	*or*	Conditional Past

86. COMPOUND TENSES OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber hablado,** to have spoken.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo hablado,** having spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Compound Present

yo	**he hablado**	I have spoken
tú	**has hablado**	thou hast spoken
él	**ha hablado**	he has spoken
V.	**ha hablado**	your honor has spoken
nosotros	**hemos hablado**	we have spoken
vosotros	**habéis hablado**	ye have spoken
ellos	**han hablado**	they have spoken
VV.	**han hablado**	your honors have spoken

Compound Imperfect

yo	**había hablado**	I had spoken	*or* used to speak.
tú	**habías hablado**	thou hadst spoken	
él	**había hablado**	he had spoken	
V.	**había hablado**	your honor had spoken	
nosotros	**habíamos hablado**	we had spoken	
vosotros	**habías hablado**	ye had spoken	
ellos	**habían hablado**	they had spoken	
VV.	**habían hablado**	your honors had spoken	

Compound Past Definite (when)

yo	**hube hablado**	I had spoken
tú	**hubiste hablado**	thou hadst spoken
él	**hubo hablado**	he had spoken
V.	**hubo hablado**	your honor had spoken
nosotros	**hubimos hablado**	we had spoken
vosotros	**hubisteis hablado**	ye had spoken
ellos	**hubieron hablado**	they had spoken
VV.	**hubieron hablado**	your honors had spoken

Compound Future

yo	**habré hablado**	I shall have spoken
tú	**habrás hablado**	thou wilt have spoken
él	**habrá hablado**	he will have spoken
V.	**habrá hablado**	your honor will have spoken
nosotros	**habremos hablado**	we shall have spoken
vosotros	**habréis hablado**	ye will have spoken
ellos	**habrán hablado**	they will have spoken
VV.	**habrán hablado**	your honors will have spoken

Compound Conditional (Consequent)

yo	**habría hablado**	I should have spoken
tú	**habrías hablado**	thou wouldst have spoken
él	**habría hablado**	he would have spoken
V.	**habría hablado**	your honor would have spoken
nosotros	**habríamos hablado**	we should have spoken
vosotros	**habrías hablado**	ye would have spoken
ellos	**habrían hablado**	they would have spoken
VV.	**habrían hablado**	your honors would have spoken

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Compound Present

yo	**haya hablado**	that I have spoken	*or* may have spoken, etc.
tú	**hayas hablado**	that thou have spoken	
él	**haya hablado**	that he have spoken	
V.	**haya hablado**	that your honor have spoken	
nosotros	**hayamos hablado**	that we have spoken	
vosotros	**hayáis hablado**	that ye have spoken	
ellos	**hayan hablado**	that they have spoken	
VV.	**hayan hablado**	that your honors have spoken	

Compound Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**hubiera hablado**	that I should have spoken	*or* had spoken, etc.
tú	**hubieras hablado**	that thou shouldst have spoken	
él	**hubiera hablado**	that he should have spoken	
V.	**hubiera hablado**	that your honor should have spoken	
nosotros	**hubiéramos hablado**	that we should have spoken	
vosotros	**hubierais hablado**	that ye should have spoken	
ellos	**hubieran hablado**	that they should have spoken	
VV.	**hubieran hablado**	that your honors should have spoken	

Compound Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**hubiese hablado**	that I had spoken	should have spoken etc.
tú	**hubieses hablado**	that thou hadst spoken	
el	**hubiese hablado**	that he had spoken	
V.	**hubiese hablado**	that your honor had spoken	
nosotros	**hubiésemos hablado**	that we had spoken	
vosotros	**hubieseis hablado**	that ye had spoken	
ellos	**hubiesen hablado**	that they had spoken	
VV.	**hubiesen hablado**	that your honors had spoken	

Compound Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	yo	**hubiere hablado**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I have spoken	*or* shall have spoken, etc
	tú	**hubieres hablado**		thou have spoken	
	él	**hubiere hablado**		he have spoken	
	V.	**hubiere hablado**		your honor have spoken	
	nosotros	**hubiéremos hablado**		we have spoken	
	vosotros	**hubiereis hablado**		ye have spoken	
	ellos	**hubieren hablado**		they have spoken	
	VV.	**hubieren hablado**		your honors have spoken	

Compòund Conditional (Antecedent)

si	yo	**hubiera**	or **hubiese**	**hablado**	if I should have spoken	*or* had spoken, etc.
	tú	**hubieras**	or **hubieses**		thou shouldst have spoken	
	él	**hubiera**	or **hubiese**		he should have spoken	
	V.	**hubiera**	or **hubiese**		your honor should have spoken	
	nosotros	**hubiéramos**	or **hubiésemos**		we should have spoken	
	vosotros	**hub'erais**	or **hubieseis**		ye should have spoken	
	ellos	**hubieran**	or **hubiesen**		they should have spoken	
	VV.	**hubieran**	or **hubiesen**		your honors should have spoken	

THE INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

87. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated interrogatively in the indicative mood only.

2. To conjugate the verb interrogatively the subject is placed after the verb, and in compound tenses after the past participle. An inverted question-mark stands at the beginning, a direct question-mark at the end of the interrogation.

3. Sometimes in a declarative sentence the subject stands after the verb; but there are then no question-marks, and in conversation the tone of voice indicates the kind of sentence.

4. In interrogative sentences it is customary to use the pronoun subjects, though they may be omitted; when omitted, the interrogation-mark is sufficient.

88. INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB HABLAR = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

¿**hablo** yo?	do I speak? (am I speaking?)
¿**hablas** tú?	dost thou speak?
¿**habla** él?	does he speak?
¿**habla** V.?	does your honor speak?
¿**hablamos** nosotros?	do we speak?
¿**habláis** vosotros?	do ye speak?
¿**hablan** ellos?	do they speak?
¿**hablan** VV.?	do your honors speak?

IMPERFECT

¿**hablaba** yo?	was I speaking? *or* did I use to speak?
¿**hablabas** tú?	wast thou speaking? *or* didst thou use to speak?
¿**hablaba** él?	was he speaking? *or* did he use to speak?
¿**hablaba** V.?	was your honor speaking? *or* did he use to speak?
¿**hablábamos** nosotros?	were we speaking? *or* did we use to speak?
¿**hablabais** vosotros?	were ye speaking? *or* did ye use to speak?
¿**hablaban** ellos?	were they speaking? *or* did they use to speak?
¿**hablaban** VV.?	were your honors speaking? *or* did your honors use to speak?

PAST DEFINITE

¿**hablé** yo?	did I speak?
¿**hablaste** tú?	didst thou speak?
¿**habló** él?	did he speak?

¿**habló** V.?	did your honor speak?
¿**hablamos** nosotros	did we speak?
¿**hablasteis** vosotros	did ye speak?
¿**hablaron** ellos?	did they speak?
¿**hablaron** VV.?	did your honors speak?

FUTURE

¿**hablaré** yo?	shall I speak?
¿**hablarás** tú?	wilt thou speak?
¿**hablará** él?	will he speak?
¿**hablará** V.?	will your honor speak?
¿**hablaremos** nosotros?	shall we speak?
¿**hablaréis** vosotros?	will ye speak?
¿**hablarán** ellos?	will they speak?
¿**hablarán** VV.?	will your honors speak?

CONDITIONAL (CONSEQUENT)

¿**hablaría** yo?	should I speak?
¿**hablarías** tú?	wouldst thou speak?
¿**hablaría** él?	would he speak?
¿**hablaría** V.?	would your honor speak?
¿**hablaríamos** nosotros?	should we speak?
¿**hablaríais** vosotros?	would ye speak?
¿**hablarían** ellos?	would they speak?
¿**hablarían** VV.?	would your honors speak?

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. PRES.	¿**he hablado** yo? etc.	have I spoken? etc.
COMP. IMP.	¿**había hablado** yo? etc.	had I spoken? etc.
COMP. PAST DEF.	¿**hube hablado** yo? etc.	(when) had I spoken? etc.
COMP. FUT.	¿**habré hablado** yo? etc.	shall I have spoken? etc.
COMP. COND.	¿**habría hablado** yo? etc.	should I have spoken? etc.

THE NEGATIVE CONJUGATION

89. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated negatively in all the moods and tenses.

2. To conjugate the verb negatively, the adverb of negation, *no* = not, is placed immediately before the verb in both simple and compound tenses.

3. In the negative of the imperative, second persons singular and plural, instead of prefixing *no* to the affirmative forms, the *no* is prefixed to the second persons singular and plural of the present subjunctive.

90. NEGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **no hablar,** not to speak. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **no hablando,** not speaking. PAST PARTICIPLE: **no hablado,** not spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**no hablo**	I do not speak	am not speaking, etc.
tú	**no hablas**	thou dost not speak	
él	**no habla**	he does not speak	
V.	**no habla**	your honor does not speak	
nosotros	**no hablamos**	we do not speak	
vosotros	**no habláis**	ye do not speak	
ellos	**no hablan**	they do not speak	
VV.	**no hablan**	your honors do not speak	

Imperfect

yo	**no hablaba**	I was not speaking	*or* did not use to speak
tú	**no hablabas**	thou wast not speaking	
él	**no hablaba**	he was not speaking	
V.	**no hablaba**	your honor was not speaking	
nosotros	**no hablábamos**	we were not speaking	
vosotros	**no hablabais**	ye were not speaking	
ellos	**no hablaban**	they were not speaking	
VV.	**no hablaban**	your honors were not speaking	

Past Definite

yo	**no hablé**	I did not speak
tú	**no hablaste**	thou didst not speak
él	**no habló**	he did not speak
V.	**no habló**	your honor did not speak
nosotros	**no hablamos**	we did not speak
vosotros	**no hablasteis**	ye did not speak
ellos	**no hablaron**	they did not speak
VV.	**no hablaron**	your honors did not speak

Future

yo	**no hablaré**	I shall not speak
tú	**no hablarás**	thou wilt not speak
él	**no hablará**	he will not speak
V.	**no hablará**	your honor will not speak
nosotros	**no hablaremos**	we shall not speak
vosotros	**no hablaréis**	ye will not speak
ellos	**no hablarán**	they will not speak
VV.	**no hablarán**	your honors will not speak

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**no hable**	that I speak not	*or* may not speak, etc.
tú	**no hables**	that thou speak not	
él	**no hable**	that he speak not	
V.	**no hable**	that your honor speak not	
nosotros	**no hablemos**	that we speak not	
vosotros	**no habléis**	that ye speak not	
ellos	**no hablen**	that they speak not	
VV.	**no hablen**	that your honors speak not	

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**no hablara**	that I should not speak	*or* spoke not.
tú	**no hablaras**	that thou shouldst not speak	
él	**no hablara**	that he should not speak	
V.	**no hablara**	that your honor should not speak	
nosotros	**no habláramos**	that we should not speak	
vosotros	**no hablarais**	that ye should not speak	
ellos	**no hablaran**	that they should not speak	
VV.	**no hablaran**	that your honors should not speak	

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**no hablase**	that I spoke not	*or* should not speak, etc.
tú	**no hablases**	that thou spoke not	
él	**no hablase**	that he spoke not	
V.	**no hablase**	that your honor spoke not	
nosotros	**no hablásemos**	that we spoke not	
vosotros	**no hablaseis**	that ye spoke not	
ellos	**no hablasen**	that they spoke not	
VV.	**no hablasen**	that your honors spoke not	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	yo	**no hablare**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I speak not	*or* shall not speak, etc.
	tú	**no hablares**		thou speak not	
	él	**no hablare**		he speak not	
	V.	**no hablare**		your honor speak not	
	nosotros	**no habláremos**		we speak not	
	vosotros	**no hablareis**		ye speak not	
	ellos	**no hablaren**		they speak not	
	VV.	**no hablaren**		your honors speak not	

Conditional (Consequent)

yo	**no hablaría**	I should not speak
tú	**no hablarías**	thou wouldst not speak
él	**no hablaría**	he would not speak
V.	**no hablaría**	your honor would not speak
nosotros	**no hablaríamos**	we should not speak
vosotros	**no hablaríais**	ye would not speak
ellos	**no hablarían**	they would not speak
VV.	**no hablarían**	your honors would not speak

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	yo	**no hablara**	or **hablase**	if	I should not speak
	tú	**no hablaras**	or **hablases**		thou shouldst not speak
	él	**no hablara**	or **hablase**		he should not speak
	V.	**no hablara**	or **hablase**		your honor should not speak
	nosotros	**no habláramos**	or **hablásemos**		we should not speak
	vosotros	**no hablarais**	or **hablaseis**		ye should not speak
	ellos	**no hablaran**	or **hablasen**		they should not speak
	VV.	**no hablaran**	or **hablasen**		your honors should not speak

or spoke **not.**

IMPERATIVE MOOD

no hables	tú	speak (thou) not
no habléis	vosotros	speak (ye) not

no hable	yo	let me not speak
no hable	él	let him not speak
no hable	V.	speak not, your honor
no hablemos	nosotros	let us not speak
no hablen	ellos	let them not speak
no hablen	VV.	speak not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **no haber hablado,** not to have spoken.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **no habiendo hablado,** not having spoken.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	yo **no he hablado,** etc.	I have not spoken, etc.
Comp. Imp.	yo **no había hablado,** etc.	I had not spoken, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	yo **no hube hablado,** etc.	(when) I had not spoken, etc.
Comp. Fut.	yo **no habré, hablado,** etc.	I shall not have spoken, etc.
Comp. Cond.	yo **no habría hablado,** etc.	I should not have spoken, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	yo **no haya hablado,** etc.	that I have not *or* may not have spoken, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	yo **no hubiera hablado,** etc.	that I should not have *or* had not spoken, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	yo **no hubiese hablado,** etc.	that I had not *or* should not have spoken, etc.
Comp. Fut.	yo **no hubiere hablado,** etc.	that I have not *or* shall not have spoken, etc.
Comp. Cond.	yo **no hubiera** or **hubiese hablado,** etc.	that I should not have *or* had not spoken, etc.

Conjugate in the Interrogative and Negative forms:

armar, to arm.
consultar, to consult.
conversar, to converse.
dudar, to doubt.
durar, to last.
fundar, to found.
girar, to turn.
importar, to import.
inclinar, to incline.
inspirar, to inspire.
interesar, to interest.
juntar, to unite.
limitar, to limit.
llevar, to carry.
luchar, to struggle.
molestar, to molest.
pesar, to weigh.
preparar, to prepare.
presentar, to present.
privar, to deprive.
representar, to represent.
separar, to separate.
sospechar, to suspect.
tirar, to draw.
transportar, to transport.

THE NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

91. 1. The Spanish verb is conjugated negatively-interrogatively in the indicative mood only.

2. This conjugation is a direct combination of the interrogative and the negative conjugations. That is, the pronoun subject stands after the verb in both the simple and the compound tenses; the adverb *no* precedes the verb, and the inverted and direct question-marks stand respectively at the beginning and the end of the expression.

In other words, make the verb interrogative and then put *no* before it.

92. NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **HABLAR** = TO SPEAK

SIMPLE TENSES

Indicative Mood

PRESENT

¿no **hablo** yo?	do I not speak? (am I not speaking?)
¿no **hablas** tú?	dost thou not speak?
¿no **habla** él?	does he not speak?
¿no **habla** V.?	does your honor not speak?
¿no **hablamos** nosotros?	do we not speak?
¿no **habláis** vosotros?	do ye not speak?
¿no **hablan** ellos?	do they not speak?
¿no **hablan** VV.?	do your honors not speak?

IMPERFECT

¿no **hablaba** yo?	was I not speaking? *or* did I not use to speak?
¿no **hablabas** tú?	wast thou not speaking? *or* didst thou not use to speak?
¿no **hablaba** él?	was he not speaking? *or* did he not use to speak?
¿no **hablaba** V.?	was your honor not speaking? *or* did your honor not use to speak?
¿no **hablábamos** nosotros?	were we not speaking? *or* did we not use to speak?
¿no **hablabais** vosotros?	were ye not speaking? *or* did ye not use to speak?
¿no **hablaban** ellos?	were they not speaking? *or* did they not use to speak?
¿no **hablaban** VV.?	were your honors not speaking? *or* did your honors not use to speak?

PAST DEFINITE

¿no **hablé** yo?	did I not speak?
¿no **hablaste** tú?	didst thou not speak?
¿no **habló** él?	did he not speak?
¿no **habló** V.?	did your honor not speak?
¿no **hablamos** nosotros?	did we not speak?
¿no **hablasteis** vosotros?	did ye not speak?
¿no **hablaron** ellos?	did they not speak?
¿no **hablaron** VV.?	did your honors not speak?

FUTURE

¿no **hablaré** yo?	shall I not speak?
¿no **hablarás** tú?	wilt thou not speak?
¿no **hablará** él?	will he not speak?
¿no **hablará** V.?	will your honor not speak?
¿no **hablaremos** nosotros?	shall we not speak?
¿no **hablaréis** vosotros?	will ye not speak?
¿no **hablarán** ellos?	will they not speak?
¿no **hablarán** VV.?	will your honors not speak?

CONDITIONAL (CONSEQUENT)

¿no **hablaría** yo?	should I not speak?
¿no **hablarías** tú?	wouldst thou not speak?
¿no **hablaría** él?	would he not speak?
¿no **hablaría** V.?	would your honor not speak?
¿no **hablaríamos** nosotros?	should we not speak?
¿no **hablaríais** vosotros?	would ye not speak?
¿no **hablarían** ellos?	would they not speak?
¿no **hablarían** VV.?	would your honors not speak?

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. PRES.	¿no **he hablado** yo? etc.	have I not spoken? etc.
COMP. IMP.	¿no **había hablado** yo? etc.	had I not spoken? etc.
COMP. PAST DEF.	¿no **hube hablado** yo? etc.	(when) had I not spoken? etc.
COMP. FUT.	¿no **habré hablado** yo? etc.	shall I not have spoken? etc.
COMP. COND.	¿no **habría hablado** yo? etc.	should I not have spoken? etc.

NOTE. — The remark in footnote on p. 26 applies here and in all succeeding verbs. Occasionally the negative-interrogative conjugation should be required.

Conjugate in the negative-interrogative:

disputar, to dispute.	**manar,** to handle.	**plantar,** to plant.
habitar, to inhabit.	**mudar,** to change.	**vigilar,** to watch over.
librar, to free.	**perfumar,** to perfume,	**votar,** to vote.

93. CONJUGATION OF THE MODEL VERB COMER, TO EAT

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **comer**, to eat. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **comiendo**, eating. PAST PARTICIPLE: **comido**, eaten.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**cómo**	I eat (do eat, am eating, etc.)
tú	**comes**	thou eatest
él	**come**	he eats
V.	**come**	your honor eats
nosotros	**comemos**	we eat
vosotros	**coméis**	ye eat
ellos	**comen**	they eat
VV.	**comen**	your honors eat

Imperfect

yo	**comía**	I was eating	I used to eat
tú	**comías**	thou wast eating	
él	**comía**	he was eating	
V.	**comía**	your honor was eating	
nosotros	**comíamos**	we were eating	
vosotros	**comíais**	ye were eating	
ellos	**comían**	they were eating	
VV.	**comían**	your honors were eating	

Past Definite

yo	**comí**	I ate
tú	**comiste**	thou didst eat
él	**comió**	he ate
V.	**comió**	your honor ate
nosotros	**comimos**	we ate
vosotros	**comisteis**	ye ate
ellos	**comieron**	they ate
VV.	**comieron**	your honors ate

Future

yo	**comeré**	I shall eat
tú	**comerás**	thou wilt eat
él	**comerá**	he will eat
V.	**comerá**	your honor will eat
nosotros	**comeremos**	we shall eat
vosotros	**comeréis**	ye will eat
ellos	**comerán**	they will eat
VV.	**comerán**	your honors will eat

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**coma**	that I eat	May, or may, eat, etc.
tú	**comas**	that thou eat	
él	**coma**	that he eat	
V.	**coma**	that your honor eat	
nosotros	**comamos**	that we eat	
vosotros	**comáis**	that ye eat	
ellos	**coman**	that they eat	
VV.	**coman**	that your honors eat	

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**comiera**	that I should eat	Might, or should, eat, etc.
tú	**comieras**	that thou shouldst eat	
él	**comiera**	that he should eat	
V.	**comiera**	that your honor should eat	
nosotros	**comiéramos**	that we should eat	
vosotros	**comierais**	that ye should eat	
ellos	**comieran**	that they should eat	
VV.	**comieran**	that your honors should eat	

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**comiese**	that I ate	Might, or should, eat, etc.
tú	**comieses**	that thou ate	
él	**comiese**	that he ate	
V.	**comiese**	that your honor ate	
nosotros	**comiésemos**	that we ate	
vosotros	**comieseis**	that ye ate	
ellos	**comiesen**	that they ate	
VV.	**comiesen**	that your honors ate	

Future

yo	**comiere**	I eat	if, when, while, although, etc.	Shall, or will, eat, etc.
tú	**comieres**	thou eat		
él	**comiere**	he eat		
V.	**comiere**	your honor eat		
nosotros	**comiéremos**	we eat		
vosotros	**comiereis**	ye eat		
ellos	**comieren**	they eat		
VV.	**comieren**	your honors eat		

Note.—**Cómo**, as personal pronoun, governed by a preposition, or in the phrase, corresponding to the English **como** meaning as. The student must distinguish it from **¿Cómo?** meaning how?

Conditional (Consequent)

yo	**comería**	I should eat
tú	**comerías**	thou wouldst eat
él	**comería**	he would eat
V.	**comería**	your honor would eat
nosotros	**comeríamos**	we should eat
vosotros	**comeríais**	ye would eat
ellos	**comerían**	they would eat
VV.	**comerían**	your honors would eat

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	yo	**comiera**	or **comiese**	if	I should eat	*or* ate
	tú	**comieras**	or **comieses**		thou shouldst eat	
	él	**comiera**	or **comiese**		he should eat	
	V.	**comiera**	or **comiese**		your honor should eat	
	nosotros	**comiéramos**	or **comiésemos**		we should eat	
	vosotros	**comierais**	or **comieseis**		ye should eat	
	ellos	**comieran**	or **comiesen**		they should eat	
	VV.	**comieran**	or **comiesen**		your honors should eat	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

come	tú	eat, thou	**no comas**	tú	eat thou not
comed	vosotros	eat, ye	**no comáis**	vosotros	eat ye not
coma	yo	let me eat	**no coma**	yo	let me not eat
coma	él	let him eat	**no coma**	él	let him not eat
coma	V.	eat, your honor	**no coma**	V.	eat not, your honor
comamos	nosotros	let us eat	**no comamos**	nosotros	let us not eat
coman	ellos	let them eat	**no coman**	ellos	let them not eat
coman	VV.	eat, your honors	**no coman**	VV.	eat not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber comido,** to have eaten.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo comido,** having eaten.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	yo **he comido,** etc.	I have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp.	yo **había comido,** etc.	I had eaten, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	yo **hube comido,** etc.	(when) I had eaten, etc.
Comp. Fut.	yo **habré comido,** etc.	I shall have eaten, etc.
Comp. Cond.	yo **habría comido,** etc.	I should have eaten, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	yo **haya comido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	yo **hubiera comido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had eaten, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	yo **hubiese comido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have eaten, etc.
Comp. Fut.	yo **hubiere comido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have eaten, etc.
Comp. Cond.	yo **hubiera** or **hubiese comido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had eaten, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aprender, to learn.
arder, to burn.
beber, to drink.
ceder, to yield.
comprender, to understand.
comprometer, to endanger.
correr, to flow, to run.
coser, to sew.
depender (de), to depend (upon).
emprender, to undertake.
exceder, to exceed.
impeler, to impel.
interceder (*con*), to intercede with.
meter (*en*), to put in.
prometer, to promise
someter, to submit.
sorprender, to overtake.
suspender, to suspend.
temer, to fear.
vender, to sell.

94. CONJUGATION OF THE MODEL VERB **VIVIR** — TO LIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **vivir**, to live. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **viviendo**, living. PAST PARTICIPLE: **vivido**, lived.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**vivo**	I live (do live, am living, etc.)
tú	**vives**	thou livest
él	**vive**	he lives
V.	**vive**	your honor lives
nosotros	**vivimos**	we live
vosotros	**vivís**	ye live
ellos	**viven**	they live
VV	**viven**	your honors live

Imperfect

yo	**vivía**	I was living
tú	**vivías**	thou wast living
él	**vivía**	he was living
V.	**vivía**	your honor was living
nosotros	**vivíamos**	we were living
vosotros	**vivíais**	ye were living
ellos	**vivían**	they were living
VV	**vivían**	your honors were living

Past Definite

yo	**viví**	I lived
tú	**viviste**	thou didst live
él	**vivió**	he lived
V.	**vivió**	your honor lived
nosotros	**vivimos**	we lived
vosotros	**vivisteis**	ye lived
ellos	**vivieron**	they lived
VV	**vivieron**	your honors lived

Future

yo	**viviré**	I shall live
tú	**vivirás**	thou wilt live
él	**vivirá**	he will live
V.	**vivirá**	your honor will live
nosotros	**viviremos**	we will live
vosotros	**viviréis**	ye will live
ellos	**vivirán**	they will live
VV.	**vivirán**	your honors will live

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo	**viva**	that I live
tú	**vivas**	that thou live
él	**viva**	that he live
V.	**viva**	that your honor live
nosotros	**vivamos**	that we live
vosotros	**viváis**	that ye live
ellos	**vivan**	that they live
VV	**vivan**	that your honors live

Imperfect (First Form)

yo	**viviera**	that I should live
tú	**vivieras**	that thou should live
él	**viviera**	that he should live
V.	**viviera**	that your honor should live
nosotros	**viviéramos**	that we should live
vosotros	**vivierais**	that ye should live
ellos	**vivieran**	that they should live
VV	**vivieran**	that your honors should live

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo	**viviese**	that I lived
tú	**vivieses**	that thou lived
él	**viviese**	that he lived
V.	**viviese**	that your honor lived
nosotros	**viviésemos**	that we lived
vosotros	**vivieseis**	that ye lived
ellos	**viviesen**	that they lived
VV	**viviesen**	that your honors lived

Future

yo	**viviere**	I live
tú	**vivieres**	thou live
él	**viviere**	he live
V.	**viviere**	your honor live
nosotros	**viviéremos**	we live
vosotros	**vivierais**	ye live
ellos	**vivieren**	they live
VV.	**vivieren**	your honors live

Conditional Consequent

yo	**viviría**	I should live
tú	**vivirías**	thou wouldst live
él	**viviría**	he would live
V.	**viviría**	your honor would live
nosotros	**viviríamos**	we should live
vosotros	**viviríais**	ye would live
ellos	**vivirían**	they would live
VV.	**vivirían**	your honors would live

Subjunctive Imperfect

si	yo	**viviera**	or **viviese**	I should live	if I lived, or
	tú	**vivieras**	or **vivieses**	thou shouldst live	
	él	**viviera**	or **viviese**	he should live	
	V.	**viviera**	or **viviese**	your honor should live	
	nosotros	**viviéramos**	or **viviésemos**	we should live	
	vosotros	**vivierais**	or **vivieseis**	ye would live	
	ellos	**vivieran**	or **viviesen**	they should live	
	VV.	**vivieran**	or **viviesen**	your honors should live	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vive	tú	live, thou	**no vivas**	tú	live thou not
vivid	vosotros	live, ye	**no viváis**	vosotros	live ye not
viva	yo	let me live	**no viva**	yo	let me not live
viva	él	let him live	**no viva**	él	let him not live
viva	V.	live, your honor	**no viva**	V.	live not, your honor
vivamos	nosotros	let us live	**no vivamos**	nosotros	let us not live
vivan	ellos	let them live	**no vivan**	ellos	let them not live
vivan	VV.	live, your honors	**no vivan**	VV.	live not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber vivido,** to have lived.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo vivido,** having lived.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he vivido,** etc.	I have lived, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había vivido,** etc.	I had lived, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube vivido,** etc.	(when) I had lived, etc.
Comp. Fut	**habré vivido,** etc.	I shall have lived, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría vivido,** etc.	I should have lived, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya vivido,** etc.	that I have, or may have lived, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera vivido,** etc.	that I should have, or had lived, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese vivido,** etc.	that I had, or should have lived, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere vivido,** etc.	that I have, or shall have lived, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese vivido,** etc.	that I should have, or had lived, etc

Conjugate in the same manner:

abrir (*pp.* **abierto**), to open.
admitir, to admit.
asistir, to be present.
consistir (en), to consist (of).
cubrir (*pp.* **cubierto**), to cover.
decidir, to decide.
discutir, to discuss.
escribir (*pp.* **escrito**), to write.
imprimir (*pp.* **impreso**), to print.
insistir (en), to insist on.
interrumpir, to interrupt.
partir, to start.
permitir, to permit.
persuadir, to persuade.
presumir, to presume.
recibir, to receive.
subir, to go up.
sufrir, to suffer, to endure.
unir, to unite.

ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES

95. Irregular verbs have been defined to be those which deviate more or less from the model verbs; hence any deviation whatsoever in the form of a verb would make it come under this head.

96. 1. Outside of the Irregular verbs, *it is a rule in Spanish that the stem of the verb throughout maintains the sound of the stem in the infinitive.* Looking back, the student will see this *perfectly* illustrated in the model verbs, where the stems of the infinitives, *habl-*, *com-*, *viv-*, are constant, *in spelling* as well as *in sound.*

2. But a great number of verbs in Spanish have certain consonants before the endings *ar*, *er* or *ir*, that necessitate a change of spelling to preserve the sound of the infinitive stem before certain other vowel endings; and again, some verbs require a slight change in spelling or accentuation to make them accord with the laws of Spanish orthography: all such verbs are said to undergo *orthographic changes* and are not considered irregular.

97. These orthographic changes are of *regular application* in all verbs *ending* as indicated below, *except* in fourteen. Many verbs *ending* in **iar, uar,** are not pronounced with the tonic accent on the weak vowel in tenses indicated. For instance in **estudiar,** the Spaniard says **estudio,** I study; *not* **estudío.** This, therefore, is not a mechanical rule as are the other thirteen.

98. The following is a tabulated list of the orthographic changes, each of which will be found illustrated in full on the page indicated:

1. Verbs ending in **car** change **c** into **qu** when followed by **e** (**Sacar,** p. 42)
2. Verbs ending in **gar** add **u** after **g** when followed by **e** (**Pagar,** p. 44)
3. Verbs ending in **guar** take a diæresis over the **u** (ü) when followed by **e** (**Averiguar,** p. 46)
4. Verbs ending in **zar** change **z** into **c** when followed by **e** (**Lanzar,** p. 48)

} viz. in {

Past Definite, 1st pers. singular.
Pres. Subjunctive throughout.
Imperat. derived from Present Subjunctive.

5. Verbs ending in **cer** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Vencer**, p. 50) 6. Verbs ending in **cir** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Esparcir**, p. 52) 7. Verbs ending in **ger** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Coger**, p. 54) 8. Verbs ending in **gir** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Dirigir**, p. 56) 9. One verb ending in **quir** changes **qu** into **c** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Delinquir**, p. 58) 10. Verbs ending in **guir** drop **u** when followed by **o** or **a** (**Distinguir**, p. 60)	viz. in	Pres. Indicative, 1st pers. sing. Pres. Subjunctive throughout. Imperat. derived from Present Subjunctive.
11. Verbs ending in **llir** drop **i** of termination when followed by **ó** or **e** (**Mullir**, p. 62) 12. Verbs ending in **ñir** drop **i** of termination when followed by **ó** or **e** (**Bruñir**, p. 64) REMARK: The verb **Tañer** drops **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e** (**Tañer** p. 66). The verbs **Henchir** and **Reenchir** *do not uniformly* drop **i** of termination before **ó** or **e**. 13. Verbs ending in **eer, uir,** change the **i** of the diphthongal endings **ie** and **ió** into **y,** since Spanish orthography does not permit *unaccented* **i** to stand between two vowels (**Creer**, p. 68)	viz. in	Pres. Participle. Past Definite, 3d pers. sing. and plural. Imperfect Subj. (first form) throughout. Imperfect Subj. (second form) throughout. Fut. Subjunctive throughout. Conditional Subj throughout.
14. Verbs ending in **iar, uar,** require a *written* accent over these weak vowels (**i, u**) whenever *they* receive the *tonic* accent (**Continuar**, p. 70)	viz. in	Pres. Ind., 1st, 2d, 3d sing., 3d plural. Pres. Subj., 1st 2d, 3d sing., 3d plural. Impera. 2d pers. sing. and forms derived from Pres. Subj., except 1st pers. plural.

99. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **SACAR** — TO TAKE OUT, REMOVE.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sacar**, to take out. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sacando**, taking out. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sacado**, taken out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	saco	I take out (do take out, am taking out)
	sacas	thou takest out
	saca	he takes out
V.	**saca**	your honor takes out
	sacamos	we take out
	sacáis	ye take out
	sacan	they take out
VV.	**sacan**	your honors take out

Imperfect

	sacaba	I was taking out
	sacabas	thou wast taking out
	sacaba	he was taking out
V.	**sacaba**	your honor was taking out
	sacabamos	we were taking out
	sacabais	ye were taking out
	sacaban	they were taking out
VV.	**sacaban**	your honors were taking out

Past Definite

	saqué	I took out
	sacaste	thou didst take out
	sacó	he took out
V.	**sacó**	your honor took out
	sacamos	we took out
	sacasteis	ye took out
	sacaron	they took out
VV.	**sacaron**	your honors took out

Future

	sacaré	I shall take out
	sacarás	thou wilt take out
	sacará	he will take out
V.	**sacará**	your honor will take out
	sacaremos	we shall take out
	sacareis	ye will take out
	sacarán	they will take out
VV.	**sacarán**	your honors will take out

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	saque	that I take out
	saques	that thou take out
	saque	that he take out
V.	**saque**	that your honor take out
	saquemos	that we take out
	saquéis	that ye take out
	saquen	that they take out
VV.	**saquen**	that your honors take out

Imperfect (First Form)

	sacara	that I should take out
	sacaras	that thou should'st take out
	sacara	that he would take out
V.	**sacara**	that your honor should take out
	sacáramos	that we should take out
	sacarais	that ye should take out
	sacaran	that they should take out
VV.	**sacaran**	that your honors should take out

Imperfect (Second Form)

	sacase	that I took out
	sacases	that thou took out
	sacase	that he took out
V.	**sacase**	that your honor took out
	sacásemos	that we took out
	sacaseis	that ye took out
	sacasen	that they took out
VV.	**sacasen**	that your honors took out

Future

	sacare	I take out
	sacares	thou take out
	sacare	he takes out
V.	**sacare**	your honor take out
	sacáremos	we take out
	sacareis	ye take out
	sacaren	they take out
VV.	**sacaren**	your honors take out

Conditional (Consequent)

sacaría	I should take out
sacarías	thou wouldst take out
sacaría	he would take out
V. **sacaría**	your honor would take out
sacaríamos	we should take out
sacaríais	ye would take out
sacarían	they would take out
VV. **sacarían**	your honors would take out

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**sacara** or **sacase**	I should take out	if	or look out
	sacaras or **sacases**	thou shouldst take out		
	sacara or **sacase**	he should take out		
	V. **sacara** or V. **sacase**	your honor should take out		
	sacáramos or **sacásemos**	we should take out		
	sacarais or **sacaseis**	ye should take out		
	sacaran or **sacasen**	they should take out		
	VV. **sacaran** or VV. **sacasen**	your honors should take out		

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

saca	take (thou) out	**no sa*que*s**	take (thou) not out
sacad	take (ye) out	**no sa*que*is**	take (ye) not out
sa*que*	let me take out	**no sa*que***	let me not take out
sa*que*	let him take out	**no sa*que***	let him not take out
sa*que* V.	take out, your honor	**no sa*que*** V.	take not out, your honor
sa*que*mos	let us take out	**no sa*que*mos**	let us not take out
sa*que*n	let them take out	**no sa*que*n**	let them not take out
sa*que*n VV.	take out, your honors	**no sa*que*n** VV.	take not out, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **car** change **c** into **qu** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sacado,** to have taken out.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sacado,** having taken out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sacado,** etc.	I have taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sacado,** etc.	I had taken out, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube sacado,** etc.	(when) I had taken out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sacado,** etc.	I shall have taken out, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sacado,** etc.	I should have taken out, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sacado,** etc.	that I have, *or* may have taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sacado,** etc.	that I should have, *or* had taken out, etc.
Comp. Imp (2d form)	**hubiese sacado,** etc.	that I had, *or* should have taken out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sacado,** etc.	that I have, *or* shall have taken out, etc..
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sacado,** etc.	that I should have, *or* had taken out, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner :

aplicar, to apply.
dedicar, to dedicate.
embarcar, to embark.
fabricar, to manufacture.
fortificar, to fortify.
justificar, to justify.
pecar, to sin.
picar, to prick.
suplicar, to entreat.
tocar, to touch.

100. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **PAGAR** = TO PAY.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **pagar,** to pay. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **pagando,** paying. PAST PARTICIPLE: **pagado,** paid.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	pago	I pay (do pay, am paying, etc.)
	pagas	thou payest
	paga	he pays
V.	**paga**	your honor pays
	pagamos	we pay
	pagáis	ye pay
	pagan	they pay
VV.	**pagan**	your honors pay

Imperfect

	pagaba	I was paying	*or* used to pay.
	pagabas	thou wast paying	
	pagaba	he was paying	
V	**pagaba**	your honor was paying	
	pagábamos	we were paying	
	pagabais	ye were paying	
	pagaban	they were paying	
VV.	**pagaban**	your honors were paying	

Past Definite

	pagué	I paid
	pagaste	thou didst pay
	pagó	he paid
V.	**pagó**	your honor paid
	pagamos	we paid
	pagasteis	ye paid
	pagaron	they paid
VV.	**pagaron**	your honors paid

Future

	pagaré	I shall pay	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.
	pagarás	thou wilt pay	
	pagará	he will pay	
V.	**pagará**	you honor will pay	
	pagaremos	we shall pay	
	pagaréis	ye will pay	
	pagarán	they will pay	
VV.	**pagarán**	your honors will pay	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	pague	that I pay	*or* may pay, etc.
	pagues	that thou pay	
	pague	that he pay	
V.	**pagu**e	that your honor pay	
	paguemos	that we pay	
	paguéis	that ye pay	
	paguen	that they pay	
VV.	**pagu**en	that your honors pay	

Imperfect (First Form)

	pagara	that I should pay	*or* paid.
	pagaras	that thou shouldst pay	
	pagara	that he should pay	
V.	**pagara**	that your honor should pay	
	pagáramos	that we should pay	
	pagarais	that ye should pay	
	pagaran	that they should pay	
VV.	**pagaran**	that your honors should pay	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	pagase	that I paid	*or* should pay, etc.
	pagases	that thou paid	
	pagase	that he paid	
V.	**pagase**	that your honor paid	
	pagásemos	that we paid	
	pagaseis	that ye paid	
	pagasen	that they paid	
VV.	**pagasen**	that your honors paid	

Future

	pagare	if, when, while, although, etc.	I pay	*or* shall pay, etc.
	pagares		thou pay	
	pagare		he pay	
V.	**pagare**		your honor pay	
	pagáremos		we pay	
	pagareis		ye pay	
	pagaren		they pay	
VV.	**pagaren**		your honors pay	

Conditional (Consequent)

	pagaría	I should pay
	pagarías	thou wouldst pay
	pagaría	he would pay
V.	**pagaría**	your honor would pay
	pagaríamos	we should pay
	pagaríais	ye would pay
	pagarían	they would pay
VV.	**pagarían**	your honors would pay

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**pagara**	or	**pagase**	if	I should pay	or paid.
	pagaras	or	**pagases**		thou shouldst pay	
	pagara	or	**pagase**		he should pay	
	V. **pagara**	or	V **pagase**		your honor should pay	
	pagáramos	or	**pagásemos**		we should pay	
	pagarais	or	**pagaseis**		ye should pay	
	pagaran	or	**pagasen**		they should pay	
	VV. **pagaran**	or	VV. **pagasen**		your honors should pay	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

paga	pay (thou)	**no pa*gu*es**	pay (thou) not
pagad	pay (ye)	**no pa*gu*éis**	pay (ye) not
pa*gu*e	let me pay	**no pa*gu*e**	let me not pay
pa*gu*e	let him pay	**no pa*gu*e**	let him not pay
pa*gu*e V.	pay, your honor	**no pa*gu*e** V.	pay not, your honor
pa*gu*emos	let us pay	**no pa*gu*emos**	let us not pay
pa*gu*en	let them pay	**no pa*gu*en**	let them not pay
pa*gu*en VV.	pay, your honors	**no pa*gu*en** VV.	pay not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **gar** add **u** after **g** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber pagado,** to have paid.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo pagado,** having paid.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he pagado**, etc.	I have paid, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había pagado**, etc.	I had paid, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube pagado**, etc.	(when) I had paid, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré pagado**, etc.	I shall have paid, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría pagado**, etc.	I should have paid, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya pagado**, etc.	that I have *or* may have paid, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera pagado**, etc.	that I should have *or* had paid, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese pagado**, etc.	that I had *or* should have paid, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere pagado**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have paid, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese pagado**, etc.	that I should have *or* had paid, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abogar, to advocate.
ahogar, to throttle.
cargar, to load.
entregar, to deliver.
juzgar, to judge.
ligar, to bind.
llegar, to arrive.
navegar, to navigate.
pegar, to chastise.
vagar, to wander.

101. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **AVERIGUAR** = TO ASCERTAIN, INVESTIGATE.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **averiguar,** to ascertain. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **averiguando,** ascertaining. PAST PARTICIPLE. **averiguado,** ascertained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

averiguo	I ascertain (do ascertain, am ascertaining)
averiguas	thou ascertainest
averigua	he ascertains
V. **averigua**	your honor ascertains
averiguamos	we ascertain
averiguáis	ye ascertain
averiguan	they ascertain
VV. **averiguan**	your honors ascertain

Imperfect

averiguaba	I was ascertaining	*or* used to ascertain
averiguabas	thou wast ascertaining	
averiguaba	he was ascertaining	
V. **averiguaba**	your honor was ascertaining	
averiguábamos	we were ascertaining	
averiguabais	ye were ascertaining	
averiguaban	they were ascertaining	
VV. **averiguaban**	your honors were ascertaining	

Past Definite

averigüé	I ascertained
averiguaste	thou didst ascertain
averiguó	he ascertained
V. **averiguó**	your honor ascertained
averiguamos	we ascertained
averiguasteis	ye ascertained
averiguaron	they ascertained
VV. **averiguaron**	your honors ascertained

Future

averiguaré	I shall ascertain	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.
averiguarás	thou wilt ascertain	
averiguará	he will ascertain	
V. **averiguará**	your honor will ascertain	
averiguaremos	we shall ascertain	
averiguaréis	ye will ascertain	
averiguarán	they will ascertain	
VV. **averiguarán**	your honors will ascertain	

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

averigüe	that I ascertain	*or* may ascertain, etc.
averigües	that thou ascertain	
averigüe	that he ascertain	
V. **averigüe**	that your honor ascertain	
averigüemos	that we ascertain	
averigüéis	that ye ascertain	
averigüen	that they ascertain	
VV. **averigüen**	that your honors ascertain	

Imperfect (First Form)

averiguara	that I should ascertain	*or* ascertained.
averiguaras	that thou shouldst ascertain	
averiguara	that he should ascertain	
V. **averiguara**	that your honor should ascertain	
averiguáramos	that we should ascertain	
averiguarais	that ye should ascertain	
averiguaran	that they should ascertain	
VV. **averiguaran**	that your honors should ascertain	

Imperfect (Second Form)

averiguase	that I ascertained	*or* should ascertain, etc.
averiguases	that thou ascertained	
averiguase	that he ascertained	
V. **averiguase**	that your honor ascertained	
averiguásemos	that we ascertained	
averiguaseis	that ye ascertained	
averiguasen	that they ascertained	
VV. **averiguasen**	that your honors ascertained	

Future

averiguare	I ascertain	if, when, while, although, etc.	*or* shall ascertain, etc.
averiguares	thou ascertain		
averiguare	he ascertain		
V. **averiguare**	your honor ascertain		
averiguáremos	we ascertain		
averiguare s	ye ascertain		
averiguaren	they ascertain		
VV. **averiguaren**	your honors ascertain		

Conditional (Consequent)

averiguaría	I should ascertain	si
averiguarías	thou wouldst ascertain	
averiguaría	he would ascertain	
V. **averiguaría**	your honor would ascertain	
averiguaríamos	we should ascertain	
averiguaríais	ye would ascertain	
averiguarían	they would ascertain	
VV. **averiguarían**	your honors would ascertain	

Conditional (Antecedent)

averguara	or	**averiguase**	if	I should ascertain, *or* ascertained.
averiguaras	or	**averiguases**		thou shouldst ascertain
averiguara	or	**averiguase**		he should ascertain
V. **averiguara**	or	V. **averiguase**		your honor should ascertain
averiguáramos	or	**averiguásemos**		we should ascertain
averiguarais	or	**averiguaseis**		ye should ascertain
averiguaran	or	**averiguasen**		they should ascertain
VV. **averiguaran**	or	VV. **averiguasen**		your honors should ascertain

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

averigua	ascertain (thou)	**no averi*güe*s**	ascertain (thou) not
averiguad	ascertain (ye)	**no averi*güé*is**	ascertain (ye) not
averi*güe*	let me ascertain	**no averi*güe***	let me not ascertain
averi*güe*	let him ascertain	**no averi*güe***	let him not ascertain
averi*güe* V.	ascertain, your honor	**no averi*güe*** V.	ascertain not, your honor
averi*güe*mos	let us ascertain	**no averi*güe*mos**	let us not ascertain
averi*güe*n	let them ascertain	**no averi*güe*n**	let them not ascertain
averi*güe*n VV.	ascertain, your honors	**no averi*güe*n** VV.	ascertain not, your honors

Note. — Verbs ending in **guar** take a diaeresis over the **u** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber averiguado,** *to have ascertained.*

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo averiguado,** *having ascertained.*

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he averiguado,** etc.	I have ascertained, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había averiguado,** etc.	I had ascertained, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube averiguado,** etc.	(when) I had ascertained, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré averiguado,** etc.	I shall have ascertained etc
Comp. Cond.	**habría averiguado,** etc.	I should have ascertained, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

haya averiguado, etc.	that I have, *or* may have ascertained, etc.
hubiera averiguado, etc.	that I should have, *or* had ascertained, etc.
hubiese averiguado, etc.	that I had, *or* should have ascertained, etc.
hubiere averiguado, etc.	that I have, *or* shall have ascertained, etc.
hubiera or **hubiese averiguado,** etc.	that I should have, *or* had ascertained, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aguar, to mix with water.
amortiguar, to dull, to mortify.
antiguar, to make obsolete.
apaciguar, to appease.
atestiguar, to testify
desmenguar, to lessen.
fraguar, to forge.
menguar, to decay.
santiguar, to bless.
sobreaguar, to float in water.

102. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **LANZAR** = TO DART, THROW

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **lanzar**, to dart. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lanzando**, darting. PAST PARTICIPLE: **lanzado**, darted.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	lanzo	I dart (do dart, am darting)
	lanzas	thou dartest
	lanza	he darts
V.	**lanza**	your honor darts
	lanzamos	we dart
	lanzáis	ye dart
	lanzan	they dart
VV.	**lanzan**	your honors dart

Imperfect

	lanzaba	I was darting
	lanzabas	thou wast darting
	lanzaba	he was darting
V.	**lanzaba**	your honor was darting
	lanzábamos	we were darting
	lanzabais	ye were darting
	lanzaban	they were darting
VV.	**lanzaban**	your honors were darting

or used to dart.

Past Definite

	lancé	I darted
	lanzaste	thou didst dart
	lanzó	he darted
V.	**lanzó**	your honor darted
	lanzamos	we darted
	lanzasteis	ye darted
	lanzaron	they darted
VV.	**lanzaron**	your honors darted

Future

	lanzaré	I shall dart
	lanzarás	thou wilt dart
	lanzará	he will dart
V.	**lanzará**	your honor will dart
	lanzaremos	we shall dart
	lanzaréis	ye will dart
	lanzarán	they will dart
VV.	**lanzarán**	your honors will dart

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	lance	that I dart
	lances	that thou dart
	lance	that he dart
V.	**lance**	that your honor dart
	lancemos	that we dart
	lancéis	that ye dart
	lancen	that they dart
VV.	**lancen**	that your honors dart

or may dart, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	lanzara	that I should dart
	lanzaras	that thou shouldst dart
	lanzara	that he should dart
V.	**lanzara**	that your honor should dart
	lanzáramos	that we should dart
	lanzarais	that ye should dart
	lanzaran	that they should dart
VV.	**lanzaran**	that your honors should dart

or darted.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	lanzase	that I darted
	lanzases	that thou darted
	lanzase	that he darted
V.	**lanzase**	that your honors darted
	lanzásemos	that we darted
	lanzaseis	that ye darted
	lanzasen	that they darted
VV.	**lanzasen**	that your honors darted

or should dart, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	lanzare	I dart
	lanzares	thou dart
	lanzare	he dart
V.	**lanzare**	your honor dart
	lanzáremos	we dart
	lanzareis	ye dart
	lanzaren	they dart
VV.	**lanzaren**	your honors dart

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall dart, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

	lanzaría	I should dart
	lanzarías	thou wouldst dart
	lanzaría	he would dart
V.	**lanzaría**	your honor would dart
	lanzaríamos	we should dart
	lanzaríais	ye would dart
	lanzarían	they would dart
VV.	**lanzarían**	your honors would dart

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**lanzara**	or	**lanzase**	if	I should dart	*or* darted.
		lanzaras	or	**lanzases**		thou shouldst dart	
		lanzara	or	**lanzase**		he should dart	
	V.	**lanzara**	or V.	**lanzase**		your honor should dart	
		lanzáramos	or	**lanzásemos**		we should dart	
		lanzarais	or	**lanzaseis**		ye should dart	
		lanzaran	or	**lanzasen**		they should dart	
	VV.	**lanzaran**	or VV.	**lanzasen**		your honors should dart	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lanza	dart (thou)	**no lances**	dart (thou) not
lanzad	dart (ye)	**no lanceis**	dart (ye) not
lance	let me dart	**no lance**	let me not dart
lance	let him dart	**no lance**	let him not dart
lance V.	dart, your honor	**no lance** V.	dart not, your honor
lancemos	let us dart	**no lancemos**	let us not dart
lancen	let them dart	**no lancen**	let them not dart
lancen VV.	dart, your honors	**no lancen** VV.	dart not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **zar** change **z** into **c** when followed by **e**, viz., in the past definite first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. This change is required by Spanish orthography, which employs **c** before **e** and **i**, and **z** before **a**, **o**, **u**, to give the **th** sound. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber lanzado**, to have darted.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo lanzado**, having darted.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he lanzado**, etc.	I have darted, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había lanzado**, etc.	I had darted, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube lanzado**, etc.	(when) I had darted, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré lanzado**, etc.	I shall have darted, etc.
Comp. Cond	**habría lanzado**, etc.	I should have darted, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya lanzado**, etc.	that I have *or* may have darted, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera lanzado**, etc.	that I should have *or* had darted, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese lanzado**, etc.	that I had *or* should have darted, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere lanzado**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have darted, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese lanzado**	that I should have *or* had darted, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

alcanzar, to reach.
calzar, to put on shoes.
descabezar, to behead.
destrizar, to crumble.
enlazar, to unite.
gozar, to enjoy.
profetizar, to prophesy.
rezar, to pray.
rivalizar, to vie with.
utilizar, to utilize.

103. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **VENCER** — TO OVERCOME

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **vencer**, to overcome. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **venciendo**, overcoming. PAST PARTICIPLE: **vencido**, overcome.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	venzo	I overcome (do overcome, am overcoming)
	vences	thou overcomest
	vence	he overcomes
Ud.	**vence**	your honor overcomes
	vencemos	we overcome
	vencéis	ye overcome
	vencen	they overcome
Uds.	**vencen**	your honors overcome

Imperfect

	vencía	I was overcoming
	vencías	thou wast overcoming
	vencía	he was overcoming
Ud.	**vencía**	your honor was overcoming
	vencíamos	we were overcoming
	vencíais	ye were overcoming
	vencían	they were overcoming
Uds.	**vencían**	your honors were overcoming

Past Definite

	vencí	I overcame
	venciste	thou overcamest
	venció	he overcame
Ud.	**venció**	your honor overcame
	vencimos	we overcame
	vencisteis	ye overcame
	vencieron	they overcame
Uds.	**vencieron**	your honors overcame

Future

	venceré	I shall overcome
	vencerás	thou will overcome
	vencerá	he will overcome
Ud.	**vencerá**	your honor will overcome
	venceremos	we shall overcome
	venceréis	ye will overcome
	vencerán	they will overcome
Uds.	**vencerán**	your honors will overcome

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	venza	that I overcome
	venzas	that thou overcome
	venza	that he overcome
Ud.	**venza**	that your honor overcome
	venzamos	that we overcome
	venzáis	that ye overcome
	venzan	that they overcome
Uds.	**venzan**	that your honors overcome

Imperfect (First Form)

	venciera	that I should overcome
	vencieras	that thou shouldst overcome
	venciera	that he should overcome
Ud.	**venciera**	that your honor should overcome
	venciéramos	that we should overcome
	vencierais	that ye should overcome
	vencieran	that they should overcome
Uds.	**vencieran**	that your honors should overcome

Imperfect (Second Form)

	venciese	that I overcame
	vencieses	that thou overcame
	venciese	that he overcame
Ud.	**venciese**	that your honor overcame
	venciésemos	that we overcame
	vencieseis	that ye overcame
	venciesen	that they overcame
Uds.	**venciesen**	that your honors overcame

Future

	venciere	I overcame
	vencieres	thou overcame
	venciere	he overcame
Ud.	**venciere**	your honor overcame
	venciéremos	we overcame
	vencierais	ye overcame
	vencieren	they overcame
Uds.	**vencieren**	your honors overcame

Conditional (Consequent)

vencería	I should overcome
vencerías	thou wouldst overcome
vencería	he would overcome
vencería	your honor would overcome
V. **venceríamos**	we should overcome
vencerías	ye would overcome
vencerían	they would overcome
VV. **vencerían**	your honors would overcome

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**venciera**	or	**venciese**	if	I should overcome
	vencieras	or	**venciese**s		thou shouldst overcome
	venciera	or	**venciese**		he should overcome
	V. **venciera**	or	V. **venciese**		your honor should overcome
	venciéramos	or	**venciésemos**		we should overcome
	vencierais	or	**venciese**is		ye should overcome
	vencieran	or	**venciesen**		they should overcome
	VV. **vencieran**	or	VV. **venciesen**		your honors should overcome

or overcame.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vence	overcome (thou)	**no venzas**	overcome (thou) not
venced	overcome (ye)	**no venzáis**	overcome (ye) not
venza	let me overcome	**no venza**	let me not overcome
venza	let him overcome	**no venza**	let him not overcome
venza V.	overcome, your honor	**no venza** V.	overcome not, your honor
venzamos	let us overcome	**no venzamos**	let us not overcome
venzan	let them overcome	**no venzan**	let them not overcome
venzan VV.	overcome, your honors	**no venzan** VV.	overcome not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **cer** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber vencido**, to have overcome.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo vencido**, having overcome.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he vencido**, etc.	I have overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había vencido**, etc.	I had overcome, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube vencido**, etc.	(when) I had overcome, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré vencido**, etc.	I shall have overcome, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría vencido**, etc.	I should have overcome, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya vencido**, etc.	that I have *or* may have overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera vencido**, etc.	that I should have *or* had overcome, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese vencido**, etc.	that I had *or* should have overcome, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere vencido**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have overcome, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** *or* **hubiese vencido**	that I should have *or* had overcome, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

* **destorcer**, to untwist. * **torcer**, to twist. * **retorcer**, to twist again.

* These verbs also belong to the first class of irregular verbs, viz., those that change **o** to **ue** whenever **o** gets the tonic accent.

104. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ESPARCIR** = TO SCATTER

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **esparcir**, to scatter. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **esparciendo**, scattering. PAST PARTICIPLE: **esparcido**, scattered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	esparzo	I scatter (do scatter, am scattering)
	esparces	thou scatterest
	esparce	he scatters
V.	**esparce**	your honor scatters
	esparcimos	we scatter
	esparcís	ye scatter
	esparcen	they scatter
VV.	**esparcen**	your honors scatter

Imperfect

	esparcía	I was scattering	or used to scatter.
	esparcías	thou wast scattering	
	esparcía	he was scattering	
V.	**esparcía**	your honor was scattering	
	esparcíamos	we were scattering	
	esparcíais	ye were scattering	
	esparcían	they were scattering	
VV.	**esparcían**	your honors were scattering	

Past Definite

	esparcí	I scattered
	esparciste	thou didst scatter
	esparció	he scattered
V.	**esparció**	your honor scattered
	esparcimos	we scattered
	esparcisteis	ye scattered
	esparcieron	they scattered
VV.	**esparcieron**	your honors scattered

Future

	esparciré	I shall scatter
	esparcirás	thou wilt scatter
	esparcirá	he will scatter
V.	**esparcirá**	your honor will scatter
	esparciremos	we shall scatter
	esparciréis	ye will scatter
	esparcirán	they will scatter
VV.	**esparcirán**	your honors will scatter

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	esparza	that I scatter	or may scatter, etc.
	esparzas	that thou scatter	
	esparza	that he scatter	
V.	**esparza**	that your honor scatter	
	esparzamos	that we scatter	
	esparzáis	that ye scatter	
	esparzan	that they scatter	
VV.	**esparzan**	that your honors scatter	

Imperfect (First Form)

	esparciera	that I should scatter	or scattered.
	esparcieras	that thou shouldst scatter	
	esparciera	that he should scatter	
V.	**esparciera**	that your honor should scatter	
	esparciéramos	that we should scatter	
	esparcierais	that ye should scatter	
	esparcieran	that they should scatter	
VV.	**esparcieran**	that your honors should scatter	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	esparciese	that I scattered	or should scatter, etc.
	esparcieses	that thou scattered	
	esparciese	that he scattered	
V.	**esparciese**	that your honor scattered	
	esparciésemos	that we scattered	
	esparcieseis	that ye scattered	
	esparciesen	that they scattered	
VV.	**esparciesen**	that your honors scattered	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**esparciere**	if, when, while, although, etc. I scatter	or shall scatter, etc.
		esparcieres	thou scatter	
		esparciere	he scatter	
	V.	**esparciere**	your honor scatter	
		esparciéremos	we scatter	
		esparciereis	ye scatter	
		esparcieren	they scatter	
	VV.	**esparcieren**	your honors scatter	

Conditional (Consequent)

	esparciría	I should scatter
	esparcirías	thou wouldst scatter
	esparciría	he would scatter
V.	**esparciría**	your honor would scatter
	esparciríamos	we should scatter
	esparciríais	ye would scatter
	esparcirían	they would scatter
VV.	**esparcirían**	your honors would scatter

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**esparciera**	or	**esparciese**	if	I should scatter	*or* scattered.
	esparcieras	or	**esparcieses**		thou shouldst scatter	
	esparciera	or	**esparciese**		he should scatter	
V.	**esparciera**	or	V. **esparciese**		your honor should scatter	
	esparciéramos	or	**esparciésemos**		we should scatter	
	esparcierais	or	**esparcieseis**		ye should scatter	
	esparcieran	or	**esparciesen**		they should scatter	
VV.	**esparcieran**	or	VV. **esparciesen**		your honors should scatter	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

esparce	scatter (thou)	**no esparzas**	scatter (thou) not
esparcid	scatter (ye)	**no esparzáis**	scatter (ye) not
esparza	let me scatter	**no esparza**	let me not scatter
esparza	let him scatter	**no esparza**	let him not scatter
esparza V.	scatter, your honor	**no esparza** V.	scatter not, your honor
esparzamos	let us scatter	**no esparzamos**	let us not scatter
esparzan	let them scatter	**no esparzan**	let them not scatter
esparzan VV.	scatter, your honors	**no esparzan** VV.	scatter not, your honors

NOTE.— Verbs ending in **cir** preceded by a consonant change **c** into **z** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber esparcido,** to have scattered.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo esparcido,** having scattered.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he esparcido,** etc.	I have scattered, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había esparcido,** etc.	I had scattered, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube esparcido,** etc.	(when) I had scattered, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré esparcido,** etc.	I shall have scattered, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría esparcido,** etc.	I should have scattered, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya esparcido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have scattered, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera esparcido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had scattered, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese esparcido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have scattered, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere esparcido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have scattered, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** *or* **hubiese esparcido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had scattered, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desuncir, to unyoke. **fruncir,** to gather into plaits. **resarcir,** to compensate. **uncir,** to yoke. **zurcir,** to darn.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE **coger**, *to gather* — PRESENT PARTICIPLE **cogiendo**, *gathering* — PAST PARTICIPLE **cogido**, *gathered*

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	co/o	I gather (*do gather, am gathering*)
	coges	thou gatherest
	coge	he gathers
V	**coge**	your honor gathers
	cogemos	we gather
	cogeis	ye gather
	cogen	they gather
VV.	**cogen**	your honors gather

Imperfect

	cogia	I was gathering
	cogias	thou wast gathering
	cogia	he was gathering
V	**cogia**	your honor was gathering
	cogiamos	we were gathering
	cogiais	ye were gathering
	cogian	they were gathering
VV	**cogian**	your honors were gathering

Past Definite

	cogí	I gathered
	cogiste	thou didst gather
	cogió	he gathered
V.	**cogió**	your honor gathered
	cogimos	we gathered
	cogisteis	ye gathered
	cogieron	they gathered
VV.	**cogieron**	your honors gathered

Future

	cogeré	I shall gather
	cogeras	thou wilt gather
	cogerá	he will gather
V.	**cogerá**	your honor will gather
	cogeremos	we shall gather
	cogereis	ye will gather
	cogerán	they will gather
VV.	**cogerán**	your honors will gather

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	co/a	that I gather
	co/as	that thou gather
	co/a	that he gather
V	**co/a**	that your honor gather
	co/amos	that we gather
	co/ais	that ye gather
	co/an	that they gather
VV.	**co/an**	that your honors gather

Imperfect (First Form)

	cogiera	that I should gather
	cogieras	that thou shouldst gather
	cogiera	that he should gather
V	**cogiera**	that your honor should gather
	cogieramos	that we should gather
	cogierais	that ye should gather
	cogieran	that they should gather
VV	**cogieran**	that your honors should gather

Imperfect (Second Form)

	cogiese	that I gathered
	cogieses	that thou gathered
	cogiese	that he gathered
V	**cogiese**	that your honor gathered
	cogiesemos	that we gathered
	cogieseis	that ye gathered
	cogiesen	that they gathered
VV.	**cogiesen**	that your honors gathered

Future

	cogiere		I gather
	cogieres		thou gather
	cogiere		he gather
V.	**cogiere**		your honor gather
	cogieremos		we gather
	cogiereis		ye gather
	cogieren		they gather
VV.	**cogieren**		your honors gather

Conditional (Consequent)

	cogería	I should gather
	cogerías	thou wouldst gather
	cogería	he would gather
V.	**cogería**	your honor would gather
	cogeríamos	we should gather
	cogeríais	ye would gather
	cogerían	they would gather
VV.	**cogerían**	your honors would gather

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**cogiera**	or	**cogiese**	I should gather	or gathered.
		cogieras	or	**cogieses**	thou shouldst gather	
		cogiera	or	**cogiese**	he should gather	
	V.	**cogiera**	or V.	**cogiese**	your honor should gather	
		cogieramos	or	**cogiesemos**	we should gather	
		cogierais	or	**cogieseis**	ye should gather	
		cogieran	or	**cogiesen**	they should gather	
	VV.	**cogieran**	or VV.	**cogiesen**	your honors should gather	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

coge	gather (thou)	**no coja's**	gather (thou) not
coged	gather (ye)	**no cojáis**	gather (ye) not
coja	let me gather	**no coja**	let me not gather
coja	let him gather	**no coja**	let him not gather
coja V.	gather, your honor	**no coja** V.	gather not, your honor
cojamos	let us gather	**no cojamos**	let us not gather
cojan	let them gather	**no cojan**	let them not gather
cojan VV.	gather, your honors	**no cojan** VV.	gather not, your honors

NOTE.—Verbs ending in **ger** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber cogido**, to have gathered.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cogido**, having gathered

Indicative Mood

Comp. Pres.	**he cogido**, etc.	I have gathered, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había cogido**, etc.	I had gathered, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube cogido**, etc.	when I had gathered, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré cogido**, etc.	I shall have gathered, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría cogido**, etc.	I should have gathered, etc.

Subjunctive Mood

Comp. Pres.	**haya cogido**, etc.	that I have or may have gathered, etc.
Comp. Imp. 1st form	**hubiera cogido**, etc.	that I should have or had gathered, etc.
Comp. Imp. 2d form	**hubiese cogido**, etc.	that I had or should have gathered, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere cogido**, etc.	that I have or shall have gathered, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese cogido**	that I should have or had gathered, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

absterger, to cleanse. **acoger**, to receive into one's house. **antecoger**, to bring before one. **escoger**, to choose. **proteger**, to protect. **recoger**, to take back. **teger**, to weave cloth.

106. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DIRIGIR** = TO GUIDE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **dirigir,** to guide. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **dirigiendo,** guiding. PAST PARTICIPLE: **dirigido,** guided.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	dirijo	I guide (do guide, am guiding)
	dirigeis	thou guidest
	dirige	he guides
V.	**dirige**	your honor guides
	dirigimos	we guide
	dirigís	ye guide
	dirigen	they guide
VV.	**dirigen**	your honors guide

Imperfect

	dirigía	I was guiding	*or* used to guide.
	dirigías	thou wast guiding	
	dirigía	he was guiding	
V.	**dirigía**	your honor was guiding	
	dirigíamos	we were guiding	
	dirigíais	ye were guiding	
	dirigían	they were guiding	
VV.	**dirigían**	your honors were guiding	

Past Definite

	dirigí	I guided
	dirigiste	thou didst guide
	dirigió	he guided
V.	**dirigió**	your honor guided
	dirigimos	we guided
	dirigisteis	ye guided
	dirigieron	they guided
VV.	**dirigieron**	your honors guided

Future

	dirigiré	I shall guide
	dirigirás	thou wilt guide
	dirigirá	he will guide
V.	**dirigirá**	your honor will guide
	dirigiremos	we shall guide
	dirigiréis	ye will guide
	dirigirán	they will guide
VV.	**dirigirán**	your honors will guide

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	dirija	that I guide	*or* may guide, etc.
	dirijas	that thou guide	
	dirija	that he guide	
V.	**dirija**	that your honor guide	
	dirijamos	that we guide	
	dirijáis	that ye guide	
	dirijan	that they guide	
VV.	**dirijan**	that your honors guide	

Imperfect (First Form)

	dirigiera	that I should guide	*or* guided.
	dirigieras	that thou shouldst guide	
	dirigiera	that he should guide	
V.	**dirigiera**	that your honor should guide	
	dirigiéramos	that we should guide	
	dirigierais	that ye should guide	
	dirigieran	that they should guide	
VV.	**dirigieran**	that your honors should guide	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	dirigiese	that I guided	*or* should guide, etc.
	dirigieses	that thou guided	
	dirigiese	that he guided	
V.	**dirigiese**	that your honor guided	
	dirigiésemos	that we guided	
	dirigieseis	that ye guided	
	dirigiesen	that they guided	
VV.	**dirigiesen**	that your honors guided	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**dirigiere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I guide	*or* shall guide, etc.
		dirigieres		thou guide	
		dirigiere		he guide	
	V.	**dirigiere**		your honor guide	
		dirigiéremos		we guide	
		dirigiereis		ye guide	
		dirigieren		they guide	
	VV.	**dirigieren**		your honors guide	

Conditional (Consequent)

	dirigiría	I should guide
	dirigirías	thou wouldst guide
	dirigiría	he would guide
V.	**dirigiría**	your honor would guide
	dirigiríamos	we should guide
	dirigiríais	ye would guide
	dirigirían	they would guide
VV.	**dirigirían**	your honors would guide

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**dirigiera**	or	**dirigiese**	if	I should guide
		dirigieras	or	**dirigieses**		thou shouldst guide
		dirigiera	or	**dirigiese**		he should guide
	V.	**dirigiera**	or V.	**dirigiese**		your honor should guide
		dirigiéramos	or	**dirigiésemos**		we should guide
		dirigierais	or	**dirigieseis**		ye should guide
		dirigieran	or	**dirigiesen**		they should guide
	VV.	**dirigieran**	or VV.	**dirigiesen**		your honors should guide

or guided.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

dirige	guide (thou)	**no diri*j*as**	guide (thou) not
dirigid	guide (ye)	**no diri*j*áis**	guide (ye) not
diri*j*a	let me guide	**no diri*j*a**	let me not guide
diri*j*a	let him guide	**no diri*j*a**	let him not guide
diri*j*a V.	guide, your honor	**no diri*j*a** V.	guide not, your honor
diri*j*amos	let us guide	**no diri*j*amos**	let us not guide
diri*j*an	let them guide	**no diri*j*an**	let them not guide
diri*j*an VV.	guide, your honors	**no diri*j*an** VV.	guide not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **gir** change **g** into **j** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber dirigido,** to have guided.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo dirigido,** having guided.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he dirigido,** etc.	I have guided, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había dirigido,** etc.	I had guided, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube dirigido,** etc.	(when) I had guided, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré dirigido,** etc.	I shall have guided, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría dirigido,** etc.	I should have guided, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya dirigido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have guided, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera dirigido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had guided, etc.
Comp. Imp (2d form)	**hubiese dirigido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have guided, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere dirigido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have guided, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese dirigido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had guided, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

afligir, to afflict.	**corregir,** to correct.	**erigir,** to erect.	**regir,** to rule.	**surgir,** to surge.
colegir, to collect.	**elegir,** to elect.	**exigir,** to exact.	**rugir,** to roar.	**urgir,** to urge

107. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DELINQUIR** = TO TRANSGRESS (LAW)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **delinquir,** to transgress. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **delinquiendo,** transgressing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **delinquido,** transgressed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	delinco	I transgress (do transgress, am transgressing)
	delinques	thou transgressest
	delinque	he transgresses
V.	**delinque**	your honor transgresses
	delinquimos	we transgress
	delinquís	ye transgress
	delinquen	they transgress
VV.	**delinquen**	your honors transgress

Imperfect

	delinquía	I was transgressing	or used to transgress.
	delinquías	thou wast transgressing	
	delinquía	he was transgressing	
V.	**delinquía**	your honor was transgressing	
	delinquíamos	we were transgressing	
	delinquíais	ye were transgressing	
	delinquían	they were transgressing	
VV.	**delinquían**	your honors were transgressing	

Past Definite

	delinquí	I transgressed
	delinquiste	thou didst transgress
	delinquió	he transgressed
V.	**delinquió**	your honor transgressed
	delinquimos	we transgressed
	delinquisteis	ye transgressed
	delinquieron	they transgressed
VV.	**delinquieron**	your honors transgressed

Future

	delinquiré	I shall transgress
	delinquirás	thou wilt transgress
	delinquirá	he will transgress
V.	**delinquirá**	your honor will transgress
	delinquiremos	we shall transgress
	delinquiréis	ye will transgress
	delinquirán	they will transgress
VV.	**delinquirán**	your honors will transgress

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	delinca	that I transgress	or may transgress, etc.
	delincas	that thou transgress	
	delinca	that he transgress	
V.	**delinca**	that your honor transgress	
	delincamos	that we transgress	
	delincáis	that ye transgress	
	delincan	that they transgress	
VV.	**delincan**	that your honors transgress	

Imperfect (First Form)

	delinquiera	that I should transgress	or transgressed.
	delinquieras	that thou shouldst transgress	
	delinquiera	that he should transgress	
V.	**delinquiera**	that your honor should transgress	
	delinquiéramos	that we should transgress	
	delinquierais	that ye should transgress	
	delinquieran	that they should transgress	
VV.	**delinquieran**	that your honors should transgress	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	delinquiese	that I transgressed	or should transgress, etc.
	delinquieses	that thou transgressed	
	delinquiese	that he transgressed	
V.	**delinquiese**	that your honor transgressed	
	delinquiésemos	that we transgressed	
	delinquieseis	that ye transgressed	
	delinquiesen	that they transgressed	
VV.	**delinquiesen**	that your honors transgressed	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**delinquiere**	if, when, while, although, etc. I transgress	or shall transgress, etc.
		delinquieres	thou transgress	
		delinquiere	he transgress	
	V.	**delinquiere**	your honor transgress	
		delinquiéremos	we transgress	
		delinquiereis	ye transgress	
		delinquieren	they transgress	
	VV.	**delinquieren**	your honors transgress	

Conditional (Consequent)

	delinquiría	I should transgress
	delinquirías	thou wouldst transgress
	delinquiría	he would transgress
V.	**delinquiría**	your honor would transgress
	delinquiríamos	we should transgress
	delinquiríais	ye would transgress
	delinquirían	they would transgress
VV.	**delinquirían**	your honors would transgress

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**delinquiera**	or	**delinquiese**	if	I should transgress
		delinquieras	or	**delinquieses**		thou shouldst transgress
		delinquiera	or	**delinquiese**		he should transgress
	V.	**delinquiera**	or V.	**delinquiese**		your honor should transgress
		delinquiéramos	or	**delinquiésemos**		we should transgress
		delinquierais	or	**delinquieseis**		ye should transgress
		delinquieran	or	**delinquiesen**		they should transgress
	VV.	**delinquieran**	or VV.	**delinquiesen**		your honors should transgress

or transgressed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

delinque	transgress (thou)	**no delin*c*as**	transgress (thou) not
delinquid	transgress (ye)	**no delin*c*áis**	transgress (ye) not
delin*c*a	let me transgress	**no delin*c*a**	let me not transgress
delin*c*a	let him transgress	**no delin*c*a**	let him not transgress
delin*c*a V.	transgress, your honor	**no delin*c*a** V.	transgress not, your honor.
delin*c*amos	let us transgress	**no delin*c*amos**	let us not transgress
delin*c*an	let them transgress	**no delin*c*an**	let them not transgress
delin*c*an VV.	transgress, your honors	**no delin*c*an**	transgress not, your honors

NOTE.—This verb ending in **quir** changes **qu** into **c** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber delinquido,** to have transgressed.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo delinquido,** having transgressed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he delinquido,** etc.	I have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había delinquido,** etc.	I had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube delinquido,** etc.	(when) I had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré delinquido,** etc.	I shall have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría delinquido,** etc.	I should have transgressed, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya delinquido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera delinquido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had transgressed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese delinquido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere delinquido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have transgressed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese delinquido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had transgressed, etc.

108. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DISTINGUIR** = TO DISTINGUISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **distinguir,** to distinguish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **distinguiendo,** distinguishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **distinguido,** distinguished

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	distin*go*	I distinguish (do distinguish, am distinguishing)
	distingues	thou distinguishest
	distingue	he distinguishes
V.	**distingue**	your honor distinguishes
	distinguimos	we distinguish
	distinguís	ye distinguish
	distinguen	they distinguish
VV.	**distinguen**	your honors distinguish

Imperfect

	distinguía	I was distinguishing	*or* used to distinguish.
	distinguías	thou wast distinguishing	
	distinguía	he was distinguishing	
V.	**distinguía**	your honor was distinguishing	
	distinguíamos	we were distinguishing	
	distinguíais	ye were distinguishing	
	distinguían	they were distinguishing	
VV.	**distinguían**	your honors were distinguishing	

Past Definite

	distinguí	I distinguished
	distinguiste	thou didst distinguish
	distinguió	he distinguished
V.	**distinguió**	your honor distinguished
	distinguimos	we distinguished
	distinguisteis	ye distinguished
	distinguieron	they distinguished
VV.	**distinguieron**	your honors distinguished

Future

	distinguiré	I shall distinguish
	distinguirás	thou wilt distinguish
	distinguirá	he will distinguish
V.	**distinguirá**	your honor will distinguish
	distinguiremos	we shall distinguish
	distinguiréis	ye will distinguish
	distinguirán	they will distinguish
VV.	**distinguirán**	your honors will distinguish

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	distin*ga*	that I distinguish	*or* may distinguish, etc.
	distin*gas*	that thou distinguish	
	distin*ga*	that he distinguish	
V.	**distin*ga***	that your honor distinguish	
	distin*ga*mos	that we distinguish	
	distin*gáis*	that ye distinguish	
	distin*gan*	that they distinguish	
VV.	**distin*gan***	that your honors distinguish	

Imperfect (First Form)

	distinguiera	that I should distinguish	*or* distinguished.
	distinguieras	that thou shouldst distinguish	
	distinguiera	that he should distinguish	
V.	**distinguiera**	that your honor should distinguish	
	distinguiéramos	that we should distinguish	
	distinguierais	that ye should distinguish	
	distinguieran	that they should distinguish	
VV.	**distinguieran**	that your honors should distinguish	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	distinguiese	that I distinguished	*or* should distinguish, etc.
	distinguieses	that thou distinguished	
	distinguiese	that he distinguished	
V.	**distinguiese**	that your honor distinguished	
	distinguiésemos	that we distinguished	
	distinguieseis	that ye distinguished	
	distinguiesen	that they distinguished	
VV.	**distinguiesen**	that your honors distinguished	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**distinguiere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I distinguish	*or* shall distinguish, etc.
	distinguieres		thou distinguish	
	distinguiere		he distinguish	
	V. **distinguiere**		your honor distinguish	
	distinguiéremos		we distinguish	
	distinguiereis		ye distinguish	
	distinguieren		they distinguish	
	VV. **distinguieren**		your honors distinguish	

Conditional (Consequent)		*Conditional (Antecedent)*			
distinguiría	I should distinguish	si	**distinguiera** or **distinguiese**	if	I should distinguish
distinguirías	thou wouldst distinguish		**distinguieras** or **distinguieses**		thou shouldst distinguish
distinguiría	he would distinguish		**distinguiera** or **distinguiese**		he should distinguish
V. **distinguiría**	your honor would distinguish		V. **distinguiera** or V. **distinguiese**		your honor should distinguish
distinguiríamos	we should distinguish		**distinguiéramos** or **distinguiésemos**		we should distinguish
distinguiríais	ye would distinguish		**distinguierais** or **distinguieseis**		ye should distinguish
distinguirían	they would distinguish		**distinguieran** or **distinguiesen**		they should distinguish
VV. **distinguirían**	your honors would distinguish		VV. **distinguieran** or VV. **distinguiesen**		your honors should distinguish

or distinguished.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

distingue	distinguish (thou)	**no distin***gas*	distinguish (thou) not
distinguid	distinguish (ye)	**no distin***gáis*	distinguish (ye) not
distin*ga*	let me distinguish	**no distin***ga*	let me not distinguish
distin*ga*	let him distinguish	**no distin***ga*	let him not distinguish
distin*ga* V.	distinguish, your honor	**no distin***ga* V.	distinguish not, your honor
distin*gamos*	let us distinguish	**no distin***gamos*	let us not distinguish
distin*gan*	let them distinguish	**no distin***gan*	let them not distinguish
distin*gan* VV.	distinguish, your honors	**no distin***gan* VV.	distinguish not, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **guir** drop **u** when followed by **o** or **a**, viz., in the present indicative first person singular, throughout the present subjunctive, and in the imperative derived from the present subjunctive. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber distinguido,** to have distinguished. COMPOUND PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo distinguido,** having distinguished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he distinguido,** etc.	I have distinguished, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había distinguido,** etc.	I had distinguished, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube distinguido,** etc.	(when) I had distinguished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré distinguido,** etc.	I shall have distinguished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría distinguido,** etc.	I should have distinguished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya distinguido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have distinguished etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera distinguido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had distinguished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese distinguido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have distinguished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere distinguido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have distinguished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese distinguido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had distinguished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

condistinguir, to make a distinction.
extinguir, to extinguish.
* **perseguir,** to pursue a fugitive.
* **proseguir,** to prosecute.
* **seguir,** to follow.
subdistinguir, to distinguish again (what has already been distinguished).
yoguir, to make a stay.

* **seguir** and its compounds also belong to the third class of irregular verbs (see § 158).

109. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **MULLIR** = TO BEAT UP

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **mullir**, to beat up. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **mu*llen*do**, beating up. PAST PARTICIPLE: **mullido**, beaten up.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	mullo	I beat (do beat, am beating) up
	mulles	thou beatest up
	mulle	he beats up
V.	**mulle**	your honor beats up
	mullimos	we beat up
	mullís	ye beat up
	mullen	they beat up
VV.	**mullen**	your honors beat up

Imperfect

	mullía	I was beating up
	mullías	thou wast beating up
	mullía	he was beating up
V.	**mullía**	your honor was beating up
	mulliamos	we were beating up
	mulliais	ye were beating up
	mullían	they were beating up
VV.	**mullían**	your honors were beating up

or used to beat up.

Past Definite

	mullí	I beat up
	mulliste	thou didst beat up
	mu*lló*	he beat up
V.	**mu*lló***	your honor beat up
	mullimos	we beat up
	mullisteis	ye beat up
	mu*lle*ron	they beat up
VV.	**mu*lle*ron**	your honors beat up

Future

	mulliré	I shall beat up
	mullirás	thou wilt beat up
	mullirá	he will beat up
V.	**mullirá**	your honor will beat up
	mulliremos	we shall beat up
	mulliréis	ye will beat up
	mullirán	they will beat up
VV.	**mullirán**	your honors will beat up.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	mulla	that I beat up
	mullas	that thou beat up
	mulla	that he beat up
V.	**mulla**	that your honor beat up
	mullamos	that we beat up
	mulláis	that ye beat up
	mullan	that they beat up
VV.	**mullan**	that your honors beat up

or may beat up, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	mu*lle*ra	that I should beat up
	mu*lle*ras	that thou shouldst beat up
	mu*lle*ra	that he should beat up
V.	**mu*lle*ra**	that your honor should beat up
	mu*llé*ramos	that we should beat up
	mu*lle*rais	that ye should beat up
	mu*lle*ran	that they should beat up
VV.	**mu*lle*ran**	that your honors should beat up

or beat up.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	mu*lle*se	that I beat up
	mu*lle*ses	that thou beat up
	mu*lle*se	that he beat up
V.	**mu*lle*se**	that your honor beat up
	mu*llé*semos	that we beat up
	mu*lle*seis	that ye beat up
	mu*lle*sen	that they beat up
VV.	**mu*lle*sen**	that your honors beat up

or should beat up, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	mu*lle*re	
	mu*lle*res	
	mu*lle*re	
V.	**mu*lle*re**	
	mu*llé*remos	
	mu*lle*reis	
	mu*lle*ren	
VV.	**mu*lle*ren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I beat up	
thou beat up	
he beat up	
your honor beat up	
we beat up	
ye beat up	
they beat up	
your honors beat up	

or shall beat up, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

mulliría	I should beat up
mullirías	thou wouldst beat up
mulliría	he would beat up
V. **mulliría**	your honor would beat up
mulliríamos	we should beat up
mulliríais	ye would beat up
mullirían	they would beat up
VV. **mullirían**	your honors would beat up

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**mu*lle*ra**	or	**mu*lle*se**	if	I should beat up
	mu*lle*ras	or	**mu*lle*ses**		thou shouldst beat up
	mu*lle*ra	or	**mu*lle*se**		he should beat up
	V. **mu*lle*ra**	or	V. **mu*lle*se**		your honor should beat up
	mu*llé*ramos	or	**mu*llé*semos**		we should beat up
	mu*lle*rais	or	**mu*lle*seis**		he should beat up
	mu*lle*ran	or	**mu*lle*sen**		they should beat up
	VV. **mu*lle*ran**	or	VV. **mu*lle*sen**		your honors should beat up

or beat up.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

mulle	beat (thou) up	**no mullas**	beat (thou) not up
mullid	beat (ye) up	**no mulláis**	beat (ye) not up
mulla	let me beat up	**no mulla**	let me not beat up
mulla	let him beat up	**no mulla**	let him not beat up
mulla V.	beat up, your honor	**no mulla** V.	beat not up, your honor
mullamos	let us beat up	**no mullamos**	let us not beat up
mullan	let them beat up	**no mullan**	let them not beat up
mullan VV.	beat up, your honors	**no mullan** VV.	beat not up, your honors

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **llir** drop **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e**, viz., in the present participle, in the past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from the third person plural of the past definite. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber mullido,** to have beaten up.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo mullido,** having beaten up.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he mullido,** etc.	I have beaten up, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había mullido,** etc.	I had beaten up, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube mullido,** etc.	(when) I had beaten up, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré mullido,** etc.	I shall have beaten up, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría mullido,** etc.	I should have beaten up, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya mullido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have beaten up, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera mullido,** etc	that I should have *or* had beaten up, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese mullido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have beaten up, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere mullido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have beaten up, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese mullido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had beaten up, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

bullir, to boil.
desmullir, to discompose anything soft.
engullir, to gorge.
remullir, to beat up again.
salpullir, to break out in pimples.
sarpullir, to be flea-bitten.
tullir, to emit dung (birds).
zabullir, to immerge.

110. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **BRUÑIR** = TO BURNISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **bruñir,** to burnish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **bru*ñen*do,** burnishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **bruñido,** burnished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	bruño	I burnish (do burnish, am burnishing)
	bruñes	thou burnishest
	bruñe	he burnishes
V.	**bruñe**	your honor burnishes
	bruñimos	we burnish
	bruñís	ye burnish
	bruñen	they burnish
VV.	**bruñen**	your honors burnish

Imperfect

	bruñía	I was burnishing	or used to burnish.
	bruñías	thou wast burnishing	
	bruñía	he was burnishing	
V.	**bruñía**	your honor was burnishing	
	bruñíamos	we were burnishing	
	bruñíais	ye were burnishing	
	bruñían	they were burnishing	
VV.	**bruñían**	your honors were burnishing	

Past Definite

	bruñí	I burnished
	bruñiste	thou didst burnish
	bru*ñó*	he burnished
V.	**bru*ñó***	your honor burnished
	bruñimos	we burnished
	bruñisteis	ye burnished
	bru*ñe*ron	they burnished
VV.	**bru*ñe*ron**	your honors burnished

Future

	bruñiré	I shall burnish
	bruñirás	thou wilt burnish
	bruñirá	he will burnish
V.	**bruñirá**	your honor will burnish
	bruñiremos	we shall burnish
	bruñiréis	ye will burnish
	bruñirán	they will burnish
VV.	**bruñirán**	your honors will burnish

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	bruña	that I burnish	or may burnish, etc.
	bruñas	that thou burnish	
	bruña	that he burnish	
V.	**bruña**	that your honor burnish	
	bruñamos	that we burnish	
	bruñáis	that ye burnish	
	bruñan	that they burnish	
VV.	**bruñan**	that your honors burnish	

Imperfect (First Form)

	bru*ñe*ra	that I should burnish	or burnished.
	bru*ñe*ras	that thou shouldst burnish	
	bru*ñe*ra	that he should burnish	
V.	**bru*ñe*ra**	that your honor should burnish	
	bru*ñé*ramos	that we should burnish	
	bru*ñe*rais	that ye should burnish	
	bru*ñe*ran	that they should burnish	
VV.	**bru*ñe*ran**	that your honors should burnish	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	bru*ñe*se	that I burnished	or should burnish, etc.
	bru*ñe*ses	that thou burnished	
	bru*ñe*se	that he burnished	
V.	**bru*ñe*se**	that your honor burnished	
	bru*ñé*semos	that we burnished	
	bru*ñe*seis	that ye burnished	
	bru*ñe*sen	that they burnished	
VV.	**bru*ñe*sen**	that your honors burnished	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**bru*ñe*re**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I burnish	or shall burnish, etc.
		bru*ñe*res		thou burnish	
		bru*ñe*re		he burnish	
	V.	**bru*ñe*re**		your honor burnish	
		bru*ñé*remos		we burnish	
		bru*ñe*reis		ye burnish	
		bru*ñe*ren		they burnish	
	VV.	**bru*ñe*ren**		your honors burnish	

Conditional (Consequent)

	bruñiría	I should burnish
	bruñirías	thou wouldst burnish
	bruñiría	he would burnish
V.	**bruñiría**	your honor would burnish
	bruñiríamos	we should burnish
	bruñiríais	ye would burnish
	bruñirían	they would burnish
VV.	**bruñirían**	your honors would burnish

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**bruñera**	or	**bruñese**	if	I should burnish	*or* burnished.
		bruñeras	or	**bruñeses**		thou shouldst burnish	
		bruñera	or	**bruñese**		he should burnish	
	V.	**bruñera**	or	V. **bruñese**		your honor should burnish	
		bruñéramos	or	**bruñésemos**		we should burnish	
		bruñerais	or	**bruñeseis**		ye should burnish	
		bruñeran	or	**bruñesen**		they should burnish	
	VV.	**bruñeran**	or	VV. **bruñesen**		your honors should burnish	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

bruñe	burnish (thou)	**no bruñas**	burnish (thou) **not**
bruñid	burnish (ye)	**no bruñáis**	burnish (ye) not
bruña	let me burnish	**no bruña**	let me not burnish
bruña	let him burnish	**no bruña**	let him not burnish
bruña V.	burnish, your honor	**no bruña** V.	burnish not, your honor
bruñamos	let us burnish	**no bruñamos**	let us not burnish
bruñan	let them burnish	**no bruñan**	let them not burnish
bruñan VV.	burnish, your honors	**no bruñan** VV.	burnish not, your honors

Note. — Verbs ending in **ñir** drop **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e**, viz., in the present participle, in the past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from the third person plural of the past definite. Where these changes occur the syllable is printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber bruñido,** to have burnished.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo bruñido,** having burnished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he bruñido,** etc.	I have burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había bruñido,** etc.	I had burnished, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube bruñido,** etc.	(when) I had burnished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré bruñido,** etc.	I shall have burnished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría bruñido,** etc	I should have burnished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya bruñido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera bruñido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had burnished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese bruñido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have burnished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere bruñido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have burnished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese bruñido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had burnished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

gañir, to yelp.
gruñir, to grunt (hogs).
guañir, to grunt (pigs) (Prov.).
muñir, to summon.
plañir, to lament.
regañir, to yelp repeatedly.
regruñir, to snarl.
restriñir, to restrain.
retiñir, to tingle, to click.

III. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **TAÑER** = TO PLAY (A STRINGED INSTRUMENT)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **tañer**, to play. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **ta*ñen*do**, playing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **tañido**, played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	taño	I play (do play, am playing)
	tañes	thou playest
	tañe	he plays
V.	**tañe**	your honor plays
	tañemos	we play
	tañéis	ye play
	tañen	they play
VV.	**tañen**	your honors play

Imperfect

	tañía	I was playing	*or* used to play
	tañías	thou wast playing	
	tañía	he was playing	
V.	**tañía**	your honor was playing	
	tañíamos	we were playing	
	tañíais	ye were playing	
	tañían	they were playing	
VV.	**tañían**	your honors were playing	

Past Definite

	tañí	I played
	tañiste	thou didst play
	ta*ñó*	he played
V.	**ta*ñó***	your honor played
	tañimos	we played
	tañisteis	ye played
	ta*ñe*ron	they played
VV.	**ta*ñe*ron**	your honors played

Future

	tañeré	I shall play
	tañerás	thou wilt play
	tañerá	he will play
V.	**tañerá**	your honor will play
	tañeremos	we shall play
	tañeréis	ye will play
	tañerán	they will play
VV.	**tañerán**	your honors will play

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	tañía	that I play
	tañías	that thou play
	tañía	that he play
V.	**tañía**	that your honor play
	tañíamos	that we play
	tañíais	that ye play
	tañían	that they play
VV.	**tañían**	that your honors play

or may play, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	ta*ñe*ra	that I should play
	ta*ñe*ras	that thou shouldst play
	ta*ñe*ra	that he should play
V.	**ta*ñe*ra**	that your honor should play
	ta*ñé*ramos	that we should play
	ta*ñe*rais	that ye should play
	ta*ñe*ran	that they should play
VV.	**ta*ñe*ran**	that your honors should play

or played.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	ta*ñe*se	that I played
	ta*ñe*ses	that thou played
	ta*ñe*se	that he played
V.	**ta*ñe*se**	that your honor played
	ta*ñé*semos	that we played
	ta*ñe*seis	that ye played
	ta*ñe*sen	that they played
VV.	**ta*ñe*sen**	that your honors played

or should play, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	ta*ñe*re	
	ta*ñe*res	
	ta*ñe*re	
V.	**ta*ñe*re**	
	ta*ñé*remos	
	ta*ñe*reis	
	ta*ñe*ren	
VV.	**ta*ñe*ren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

	I play	
	thou play	
	he play	
V.	your honor play	
	we play	
	ye play	
	they play	
VV.	your honors play	

or shall play etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

tañería	I should play
tañerías	thou wouldst play
tañería	he would play
V. **tañería**	your honor would play
tañeríamos	we should play
tañeríais	ye would play
tañerían	they would play
VV. **tañerían**	your honors would play

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**ta*ñe*ra**	or	**ta*ñe*se**	if	I should play	*or* played.
	ta*ñe*ras	or	**ta*ñe*ses**		thou shouldst play	
	ta*ñe*ra	or	**ta*ñe*se**		he should play	
	V. **ta*ñe*ra**	or	V. **ta*ñe*se**		your honor should play	
	ta*ñé*ramos	or	**ta*ñé*semos**		we should play	
	ta*ñe*rais	or	**ta*ñe*seis**		ye should play	
	ta*ñe*ran	or	**ta*ñe*sen**		they should play	
	VV. **ta*ñe*ran**	or	VV. **ta*ñe*sen**		your honors should play	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

tañe	play (thou)	**no tañas**	play (thou) not
tañed	play (ye)	**no tañáis**	play (ye) not
tañe	let me play	**no tañe**	let me not play
tañe	let him play	**no tañe**	let him not play
tañe V.	play, your honor	**no tañe** V.	play not, your honor
tañamos	let us play	**no tañamos**	let us not play
tañan	let them play	**no tañan**	let them not play
tañan VV.	play, your honors	**no tañan** VV.	play not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber tañido,** to have played.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo tañido,** having played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he tañido,** etc.	I have played, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había tañido,** etc.	I had played, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube tañido,** etc.	(when) I had played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré tañido,** etc.	I shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría tañido** etc.	I should have played, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya tañido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have played, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera tañido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had played, etc.
Comp Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese tañido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere tañido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese tañido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had played, etc.

NOTE. — **Tañer** has the same changes as verbs ending in **ñir.**

Conjugate in the same manner:

atañer, to appertain.

REMARK. — The verbs **henchir** and **reenchir** *do not uniformly* drop the **i** of the termination when followed by **ó** or **e**.

112. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **CREER** = TO BELIEVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **creer,** to believe. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **creyendo,** believing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **creído,** believed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	creo	I believe (do believe, am believing)
	crees	thou believest
	cree	he believes
V.	**cree**	your honor believes
	creemos	we believe
	creéis	ye believe
	creen	they believe
VV.	**creen**	your honors believe

Imperfect

	creía	I was believing	*or* used to believe.
	creías	thou wast believing	
	creía	he was believing	
V.	**creía**	your honor was believing	
	creíamos	we were believing	
	creíais	ye were believing	
	creían	they were believing	
VV.	**creían**	your honors were believing	

Past Definite

	creí	I believed
	creíste	thou didst believe
	creyó	he believed
V.	**creyó**	your honor believed
	creímos	we believed
	creísteis	ye believed
	creyeron	they believed
VV.	**creyeron**	your honors believed.

Future

	creeré	I shall believe
	creerás	thou wilt believe
	creerá	he will belive
V.	**creerá**	your honor will believe
	creeremos	we shall believe
	creeréis	ye will believe
	creerán	they will believe
VV.	**creerán**	your honors will believe

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	crea	that I believe	*or* may believe, etc.
	creas	that thou believe	
	crea	that he believe	
V.	**crea**	that your honor believe	
	creamos	that we believe	
	creáis	that ye believe	
	crean	that they believe	
VV.	**crean**	that your honors believe	

Imperfect (First Form)

	creyera	that I should believe	*or* believed.
	creyeras	that thou shouldst believe	
	creyera	that he should believe	
V.	**creyera**	that your honor should believe	
	creyéramos	that we should believe	
	creyerais	that ye should believe	
	creyeran	that they should believe	
VV.	**creyeran**	that your honors should believe	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	creyese	that I believed	*or* should believe, etc.
	creyeses	that thou believed	
	creyese	that he believed	
V.	**creyese**	that your honor believed	
	creyésemos	that we believed	
	creyeseis	that ye believed	
	creyesen	that they believed	
VV.	**creyesen**	that your honors believed	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**creyere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I believe	*or* shall believe, etc.
	creyeres		thou believe	
	creyere		he believe	
V.	**creyere**		your honor believe	
	creyéremos		we believe	
	creyereis		ye believe	
	creyeren		they believe	
VV.	**creyeren**		your honors believe	

Conditional (Consequent)

	creería	I should believe
	creerías	thou wouldst believe
	creería	he would believe
V.	**creería**	your honor would believe
	creeríamos	we should believe
	creeríais	ye would believe
	creerían	they would believe
VV.	**creerían**	your honors would believe

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**cre*y*era**	or	**cre*y*ese**	if	I should believe	*or* believed.
	cre*y*eras	or	**cre*y*eses**		thou shouldst believe	
	cre*y*era	or	**cre*y*ese**		he should believe	
	V. **cre*y*era**	or	V. **cre*y*ese**		your honor should believe	
	cre*y*éramos	or	**cre*y*ésemos**		we should believe	
	cre*y*erais	or	**cre*y*eseis**		ye should believe	
	cre*y*eran	or	**cre*y*esen**		they should believe	
	VV. **cre*y*eran**	or	VV. **cre*y*esen**		your honors should believe	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

cree	believe (thou)	**no creas**	believe (thou) not
creed	believe (ye)	**no creáis**	believe (ye) not
crea	let me believe	**no crea**	let me not believe
crea	let him believe	**no crea**	let him not believe
crea V.	believe, your honor	**no crea** V.	believe not, your honor
creamos	let us believe	**no creamos**	let us not believe
crean	let them believe	**no crean**	let them not believe
crean VV.	believe, your honors	**no crean** VV.	believe not, your honors

Note. — Verbs ending in **eer** or **uir** (not **quir, guir**) change the **i** of the diphthongal endings **ie, ió** to **y**, since Spanish orthography does not permit unaccented **i** to stand between two vowels, viz., in present participle, past definite third person singular and plural, and in the subjunctive tenses derived from third person plural past definite. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber creído,** to have believed.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo creído,** having belived.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he creído,** etc.	I have believed, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había creído,** etc.	I had believed, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube creído,** etc.	(when) I had believed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré creído,** etc.	I shall have believed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría creído,** etc.	I should have believed, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya creído,** etc.	that I have *or* may have believed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera creído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had believed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese creído,** etc.	that I had *or* should have believed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere creído,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have believed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese creído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had believed, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desproveer, to deprive of provisions. **leer,** to read. **poseer,** to possess. **proveer,** to provide.

For verbs in **uir,** see **atribuir** and **argüir,** fifth class of irregular verbs.

113. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **CONTINUAR** = TO CONTINUE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **continuar**, to continue. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **continuando**, continuing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **continuado**, continued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	continúo	I continue (do continue, am continuing)
	continúas	thou continuest
	continúa	he continues
V.	**continúa**	your honor continues
	continuamos	we continue
	continuáis	ye continue
	continúan	they continue
VV.	**continúan**	your honors continue

Imperfect

	continuaba	I was continuing
	continuabas	thou wast continuing
	continuaba	he was continuing
V.	**continuaba**	your honor was continuing
	continuábamos	we were continuing
	continuabais	ye were continuing
	continuaban	they were continuing
VV.	**continuaban**	your honors were continuing

or used to continue, etc.

Past Definite

	continué	I continued
	continuaste	thou didst continue
	continuó	he continued
V.	**continuó**	your honor continued
	continuamos	we continued
	continuasteis	ye continued
	continuaron	they continued
VV.	**continuaron**	your honors continued

Future

	continuaré	I shall continue
	continuarás	thou wilt continue
	continuará	he will continue
V.	**continuará**	your honor will continue
	continuaremos	we shall continue
	continuaréis	ye will continue
	continuarán	they will continue
VV.	**continuarán**	your honors will continue

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	continúe	that I continue
	continúes	that thou continue
	continúe	that he continue
V.	**continúe**	that your honor continue
	continuemos	that we continue
	continuéis	that ye continue
	continúen	that they continue
VV.	**continúen**	that your honors continue

or may continue, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	continuara	that I should continue
	continuaras	that thou shouldst continue
	continuara	that he should continue
V.	**continuara**	that your honor should continue
	continuáramos	that we should continue
	continuarais	that ye should continue
	continuaran	that they should continue
VV.	**continuaran**	that your honors should continue

or continued.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	continuese	that I continued
	continueses	that thou continued
	continuese	that he continued
V.	**continuese**	that your honor continued
	continuésemos	that we continued
	continueseis	that ye continued
	continuesen	that they continued
VV.	**continuesen**	that your honors continued

or should continue, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	continuare	I continue
	continuares	thou continue
	continuare	he continue
V.	**continuare**	your honor continue
	continuáremos	we continue
	continuareis	ye continue
	continuaren	they continue
VV.	**continuaren**	your honors continue

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall continue, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

	continuaría	I should continue
	continuarías	thou wouldst continue
	continuaría	he would continue
V.	**continuaría**	your honor would continue
	continuaríamos	we should continue
	continuaríais	ye would continue
	continuarían	they would continue
VV.	**continuarían**	your honors would continue

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**continuara**	or	**continuese**	if	I should continue	*or* continued.
		continuaras	or	**continueses**		thou shouldst continue	
		continuara	or	**continuese**		he should continue	
	V.	**continuara**	or V.	**continuese**		your honor should continue	
		continuáramos	or	**continuésemos**		we should continue	
		continuarais	or	**continueseis**		ye should continue	
		continuaran	or	**continuesen**		they should continue	
	VV.	**continuaran**	or VV.	**continuesen**		your honors should continue	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

continúa	continue (thou)	**no continúes**	continue (thou) not
continuad	continue (ye)	**no continuéis**	continue (ye) not
continúe	let me continue	**no continúe**	let me not continue
continúe	let him continue	**no continúe**	let him not continue
continúe V.	continue, your honor	**no continúe** V.	continue not, your honor
continuemos	let us continue	**no continuemos**	let us not continue
continúen	let them continue	**no continúen**	let them not continue
continúen VV.	continue, your honors	**no continúen** VV.	continue not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber continuado,** to have continued.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo continuado,** having continued.

Indicative Mood

Comp. Pres.	**he continuado,** etc.	I have continued, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había continuado,** etc.	I had continued, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube continuado,** etc.	(when) I had continued, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré continuado,** etc.	I shall have continued, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría continuado,** etc.	I should have continued, etc.

Subjunctive Mood

Comp. Pres.	**haya continuado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have continued, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera continuado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had continued, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese continuado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have continued, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere continuado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have continued, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** *or* **hubiese continuado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had continued, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

confiar, to confide in.	**efectuar,** to accomplish.	**exceptuar,** to except, exempt.	**ganzuar,** to pick a lock.	**vaciar,** to empty.
criar, to create.	**enviar,** to send.	**expiar,** to expiate.	**guiar,** to guide.	**variar,** to vary.

NOTE. — Verbs ending in **iar, uar** require a *written* accent over the weak vowel (**i, u**) whenever it receives the tonic accent, viz., in first, second and third persons singular, and the third person plural, of the present indicative and the present subjunctive, and the corresponding forms of the imperative. These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

NOTE. — In verbs like *estudiar, remediar, limpiar, cambiar,* etc., the weak vowel does not receive the graphic accent, because the Spaniards pronounce the word with the tonic accent on the real stem of the verb, which precedes the weak vowel, e.g., *estudio,* etc., *remedio,* etc., *limpio,* etc., *cambio,* etc.

114. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB **ESTAR** = TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **estar,** to be. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **estando,** being. PAST PARTICIPLE: **estado,** been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	estoy	I am
	estás	thou art
	está	he is
V.	**está**	your honor is
	estamos	we are
	estáis	ye are
	están	they are
VV.	**están**	your honors are

Imperfect

	estaba	I was	*or* used to be.
	estabas	thou wast	
	estaba	he was	
V.	**estaba**	your honor was	
	estábamos	we were	
	estabais	ye were	
	estaban	they were	
VV.	**estaban**	your honors were	

Past Definite (when)

	estuve	I was
	estuviste	thou wast
	estuvo	he was
V.	**estuvo**	your honor was
	estuvimos	we were
	estuvisteis	ye were
	estuvieron	they were
VV.	**estuvieron**	your honors were

Future

	estaré	I shall be
	estarás	thou wilt be
	estará	he will be
V.	**estará**	your honor will be
	estaremos	we shall be
	estaréis	ye will be
	estarán	they will be
VV.	**estarán**	your honors will be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Future

	esté	that I be	*or* may be, etc.
	estés	that thou be	
	esté	that he be	
V.	**esté**	that your honor be	
	estemos	that we be	
	estéis	that ye be	
	estén	that they be	
VV.	**estén**	that your honors be	

Imperfect (*First Form*)

	estuviera	that I should be	*or* were.
	estuvieras	that thou shouldst be	
	estuviera	that he should be	
V.	**estuviera**	that your honor should be	
	estuviéramos	that we should be	
	estuvierais	that ye should be	
	estuvieran	that they should be	
VV.	**estuvieran**	that your honors should be	

Imperfect (*Second Form*)

	estuviese	that I were	*or* should be, etc.
	estuvieses	that thou were	
	estuviese	that he were	
V.	**estuviese**	that your honor were	
	estuviésemos	that we were	
	estuvieseis	that ye were	
	estuviesen	that they were	
VV.	**estuviesen**	that your honors were	

Present

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**estuviere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I be	*or* shall be, etc.
		estuvieres		thou be	
		estuviere		he be	
	V.	**estuviere**		your honor be	
		estuviéremos		we be	
		estuviereis		ye be	
		estuvieren		they be	
	VV.	**estuvieren**		your honors be	

Conditional (Consequent)

	estaría	I should be
	estarías	thou wouldst be
	estaría	he would be
V.	**estaría**	your honor would be
	estaríamos	we should be
	estaríais	ye would be
	estarían	they would be
VV.	**estarían**	your honors would be

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**estuviera**	or	**estuviese**	if	I should be
		estuvieras	or	**estuvieses**		thou shouldst be
		estuviera	or	**estuviese**		he should be
	V.	**estuviera**	or V.	**estuviese**		your honor should be
		estuviéramos	or	**estuviésemos**		we should be
		estuvierais	or	**estuvieseis**		ye should be
		estuvieran	or	**estuviesen**		they should be
	VV.	**estuvieran**	or VV.	**estuviesen**		your honors should be

or were.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

está	be (thou)	**no estés**	be (thou) not
estad	be (ye)	**no estéis**	be (ye) not
esté	let me be	**no esté**	let me not be
esté	let him be	**no esté**	let him not be
esté V.	be, your honor	**no esté** V.	be not, your honor
estemos	let us be	**no estemos**	let us not be
estén	let them be	**no estén**	let them not be
estén VV.	be, your honors	**no estén** VV.	be not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber estado,** to have been.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo estado,** having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he estado,** etc.	I have been, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había estado,** etc.	I had been, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube estado,** etc.	(when) I had been, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré estado,** etc.	I shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría estado,** etc.	I should have been, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya estado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera estado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese estado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have been, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere estado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese estado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been, etc.

Note. — **Estar** is an irregular verb of the sixth class, see § 161.

There are two verbs meaning 'to be': **ser** and **estar.** **Estar** is used:

1. When the attribute expressed by the predicate *adjective* is accidental or temporary.
2. To indicate location of persons and things, even though permanent.
3. With the present participle to form the progressive conjugation of the verb.

Its use may perhaps be more easily understood by remembering that it is derived from the Latin, *stare*, to stand.

115. CONJUGATION OF THE PROGRESSIVE VERB **ESTAR COMIENDO** = TO BE EATING

SIMPLE TENSES

INFIN.: **estar comiendo,** to be eating. PRESENT PART.: **estando comiendo** being eating. PAST PART.: **estado comiendo,** been eating.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	estoy comiendo	I am eating
	estás comiendo	thou art eating
	está comiendo	he is eating
V.	**está comiendo**	your honor is eating
	estamos comiendo	we are eating
	estáis comiendo	ye are eating
	están comiendo	they are eating
VV.	**están comiendo**	your honors are eating

Imperfect

	estaba comiendo	I was eating	*or* used to be eating.
	estabas comiendo	thou wast eating	
	estaba comiendo	he was eating	
V.	**estaba comiendo**	your honor was eating	
	estábamos comiendo	we were eating	
	estabais comiendo	ye were eating	
	estaban comiendo	they were eating	
VV.	**estaban comiendo**	your honors were eating	

Past Definite (when)

	estuve comiendo	I was eating
	estuviste comiendo	thou wast eating
	estuvo comiendo	he was eating
V.	**estuvo comiendo**	your honor was eating
	estuvimos comiendo	we were eating
	estuvisteis comiendo	ye were eating
	estuvieron comiendo	they were eating
VV.	**estuvieron comiendo**	your honors were eating

Future

	estaré comiendo	I shall be eating
	estarás comiendo	thou wilt be eating
	estará comiendo	he will be eating
V.	**estará comiendo**	your honor will be eating
	estaremos comiendo	we shall be eating
	estaréis comiendo	ye will be eating
	estarán comiendo	they will be eating
VV.	**estarán comiendo**	your honors will be eating

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	esté comiendo	that I be eating	*or* may be eating, etc.
	estés comiendo	that thou be eating	
	esté comiendo	that he be eating	
V.	**esté comiendo**	that your honor be eating	
	estemos comiendo	that we be eating	
	estéis comiendo	that ye be eating	
	estén comiendo	that they be eating	
VV.	**estén comiendo**	that your honors be eating	

Imperfect (*First Form*)

	estuviera comiendo	that I should be eating	*or* were eating.
	estuvieras comiendo	that thou shouldst be eating	
	estuviera comiendo	that he should be eating	
V.	**estuviera comiendo**	that your honor should be eating	
	estuviéramos comiendo	that we should be eating	
	estuvierais comiendo	that ye should be eating	
	estuvieran comiendo	that they should be eating	
VV.	**estuvieran comiendo**	that your honors should be eating	

Imperfect (*Second Form*)

	estuviese comiendo	that I were eating	*or* should be eating, etc.
	estuvieses comiendo	that thou wert eating	
	estuviese comiendo	that he were eating	
V.	**estuviese comiendo**	that your honor were eating	
	estuviésemos comiendo	that we were eating	
	estuvieseis comiendo	that ye were eating	
	estuviesen comiendo	that they were eating	
VV.	**estuviesen comiendo**	that your honors were eating	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**estuviere comiendo**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I be eating	*or* shall be eating, etc.
	estuvieres comiendo		thou be eating	
	estuviere comiendo		he be eating	
	V. **estuviere comiendo**		your honor be eating	
	estuviéremos comiendo		we be eating	
	estuviereis comiendo		ye be eating	
	estuvieren comiendo		they be eating	
	VV. **estuvieren comiendo**		your honors be eating	

Conditional (Consequent)

estaría comiendo	I should be eating
estarías comiendo	thou wouldst be eating
estaría comiendo	he would be eating
V. **estaría comiendo**	your honor would be eating
estaríamos comiendo	we should be eating
estaríais comiendo	ye would be eating
estarían comiendo	they would be eating
VV. **estarían comiendo**	your honors would be eating

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**estuviera**	or	**estuviese**	**comiendo**	if	I should be eating
	estuvieras	or	**estuvieses**			thou shouldst be eating
	estuviera	or	**estuviese**			he should be eating
	V **estuviera**	or	V. **estuviese**			your honor should be eating
	estuviéramos	or	**estuviésemos**			we should be eating
	estuvierais	or	**estuvieseis**			ye should be eating
	estuvieran	or	**estuviesen**			they should be eating
	VV. **estuvieran**	or	VV. **estuviesen**			your honors should be eating

or were eating.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

está comiendo	be (thou) eating	**no estés comiendo**	be (thou) not eating
estad comiendo	be (ye) eating	**no estéis comiendo**	be (ye) not eating
esté comiendo	let me be eating	**no esté comiendo**	let me not be eating
esté comiendo	let him be eating	**no esté comiendo**	let him not be eating
esté comiendo V.	be eating, your honor	**no esté comiendo** V.	be not eating, your honor
estemos comiendo	let us be eating	**no estemos comiendo**	let us not be eating
estén comiendo	let them be eating	**no estén comiendo**	let them not be eating
estén comiendo VV.	be eating, your honors	**no estén comiendo** VV.	be not eating, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFIN.: **haber estado comiendo**, to have been eating.

COMP. PRESENT PARTIC.: **habiendo estado comiendo**, having been eating.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he estado comiendo**, etc.	I have been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había estado comiendo**, etc.	I had been eating, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube estado comiendo**, etc.	(when) I had been eating, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré estado comiendo**, etc.	I shall have been eating, etc.
Comp. Cond	**habría estado comiendo**, etc.	I should have been eating, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya estado comiendo**, etc.	that I have *or* may have been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera estado comiendo**, etc.	that I should have *or* had been eating, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese estado comiendo**, etc.	that I had *or* should have been eating, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere estado comiendo**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have been eating, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese estado comiendo**, etc.	that I should have *or* had been eating, etc.

NOTE. — The present participle of a verb used with *estar*, to be, corresponds to and is an exact literal translation of the progressive form in English, and expresses the action of the verb as continuing and unfinished.

To express continuance, *estar* is not used, however, with the present participle of the verbs *ser*, to be; *ir*, to go; *venir*, to come; or *estar*, to be. We should say *él viene*, not *él está viniendo*, etc. When used to express temporary or transitory state or condition and when used to form the progressive conjugation, *estar* has quite a number of substitutes or equivalents whose meaning sufficiently explains their use, e.g., *ir*, *andar*, to go; *anda muy distraído*, he is very absent-minded; *seguir*, to go on: he went on talking, *siguió hablando; hallarse* or *encontrarse*, to find one's self; *me hallé hablando*, I found myself (I was) talking; *quedar*, *verse*: *se vió muriendo*, he saw himself (he was) dying; *se halla malo*, he is sick; *se queda callado*, he is silent.

PRONOMINAL VERBS

116. Pronominal verbs are those which have an objective pronoun that represents the same person or thing as the subject of the verb; this objective pronoun may be direct object (accusative) or indirect object (dative).

Pronominal verbs are subdivided into two classes: reflexive verbs and reciprocal verbs.

117. Reflexive verbs are those in which the action takes place upon the subject, either as direct or as indirect object; hence any transitive verb may assume the reflexive form. If the person is naturally the direct object, the object pronoun is in the accusative case; if the person is naturally the indirect object, the object pronoun is in the dative case. But both these reflexive object pronoun forms are identical in the dative and the accusative, as will be seen from the following:

Nominative	Accusative and Dative	
yo	*me*	I myself (*or* to myself)
tú	*te*	Thou thyself (*or* to thyself).
él, ella, V.	*se*	He, her, your honor himself *or* herself (or to himself *or* herself).
nosotros -as	*nos*	We ourselves (*or* to ourselves).
vosotros -as	*os*	Ye yourselves (*or* to yourselves).
ellos, ellas, VV.	*se*	They, your honors themselves (*or* to themselves).

118. Reciprocal verbs are those in which the action takes place between two or among a number of persons: hence the verb is always in the plural, and the object pronouns (identical in form with the plural reflexive objective pronouns, *nos, os, se*) are to be translated *each other* if the action be of one person on another, and *one another* if more than two are concerned.

Position of the Object Pronouns

119. The position of the object pronouns is the same as that of ordinary object pronouns.

120. In the infinitive, present participle, and imperative affirmative, the object pronouns stand after the verb, and are joined to it so as to form one word, the graphic accent being used when necessary to maintain the original pronunciation of the verb. Example: *Comerlo, comiéndolo, cómalo V.; lavarse lavándose, lávese V.*

When the object pronouns are thus placed after the verb, *d* in the second person plural of the imperative affirmative is elided for euphony (except in the verb *ir*, which makes *idos*, go away), as is also the *s* in the first person plural imperative affirmative; thus *lavados* becomes *lavaos*, wash yourselves, and *lavámosnos* becomes *lavámonos*, let us wash ourselves.

To Distinguish between Reflexive and Reciprocal Use

121. In the three persons plural, to show that a verb is used reflexively and not reciprocally; and in the three persons singular, to indicate emphasis or contrast, the pleonastic prepositional form of the object pronoun preceded by *á* is added to the verb, and may be strengthened by using *mismo* or *propio*, equivalent to the English *own*, or *very*; so that the full distinctive reflexive or emphatic construction would be (observe the order with reference to the verb in sentence):

Nominative	Accusative and Dative	Verb	Prepositional form with *á* strengthened by *mismo -a, propio -a*
yo	*me*	"	*á mí mismo -a* (*propio -a*), my own self *or* to my own self.
tú	*te*	"	*á tí mismo -a* (*propio -a*), thy own self *or* to thy own self.
él, ella, V.	*se*	"	*á sí mismo -a* (*propio- a*).
nosotros -as	*nos*	"	*á nosotros mismos -as* (*propios -as*).
vosotros -as	*os*	"	*á vosotros mismos -as* (*propios -as*).
ellos, ellas, VV.	*se*	"	*á sí mismos -as* (*propios -as*).

Yo me lavo á mí mismo, I wash my own self.
Ellas se lavan á sí mismas, they wash their very selves.

This pleonastic construction, be it understood, may also be used without *mismo -a, propio -a.* In this case the equivalent English emphasis would be,

Yo me lavo á mí, I wash my*self.*

122. In the three persons plural, to show that the verb is used reciprocally and not reflexively, the appropriate forms, *uno . . . otro, una . . . otra, unos . . . otros, unas . . . otras,* or *el uno . . . el otro, la una . . . la otra, los unos . . . los otros, las unas . . . las otras,* meaning each other, one another, must be employed.

Ellas se lavan á sí mismas, they wash themselves; but
Ellas se lavan las unas á las otras, they wash one another.

123. Besides the class of verbs temporarily used as reflexive verbs, there is a large class of permanent or essential reflexive verbs — verbs that have the reflexive form only.

To make the student familiar with this important subject, we shall give:

1. The conjugation of a temporary reflexive verb, with the pronoun object in the accusative case (*lavarse*).

2. The conjugation of a temporary reflexive verb, with the pronoun object in the dative case (*permitirse*).

3. The conjugation of a permanent reflexive verb (*alegrarse*).

4. The conjugation of the impersonal substitute for the personal forms of a permanent reflexive verb (*alegrarse*).

5. The conjugation of a reciprocal verb (*abrazarse*).

124. Before proceeding with these conjugations, attention is invited to the following table of personal pronouns and their inflections; to the favorite pleonastic construction; and to the important rules for the position of two objective pronouns — all of great importance in the proper use of reflexive verbs.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS AND THEIR INFLECTIONS

Pleonastic construction: 1st, dative and prepositional (with *á*): *le habla á él,* he speaks to him; 2d, accusative and prepositional (with *á*): *la busca á ella,* he seeks her.

			Nominative	Dative	Accusative	Prepositional
Singular	1st Person		yo	me	me	mí, (conmigo)
	2d Person		tú	te	te	tí (contigo)
	3d Person	Masculine	él	le	le (*him*), lo (*it*)	él
		Feminine	ella	le	la (*her*, *it*)	ella
		Neuter	ello	[none]	lo (*it*)	ello
Plural	1st Person	Masculine	nosotros	nos	nos	nosotros
		Feminine	nosotras	nos	nos	nosotras
	2d Person	Masculine	vosotros	os	os	vosotros
		Feminine	vosotras	os	os	vosotras
	3d Person	Masculine	ellos	les	los	ellos
		Feminine	ellas	les	las	ellas
Se, reflexive substitute for 3d person common to both numbers. Corresponds to English *self* in 3d person, to distinguish reflexive action. He strikes him = another, but he strikes himself.			[none]	se	se	sí (consigo)
Usted should be treated like a noun, invariable except for number, plural *ustedes*, hence:			V.	á V.	á V.	á con, etc., V.
			VV.	á VV.	á VV.	á, con, etc., VV.
Pleonastic construction for V.				le . . á V. / les . . á VV.	le, la . . á V. / los, las . . á VV.	

NOTE. — Concerning the use of *le, lo, la, les, los las,* the following is the prevailing usage, as indicated in the foregoing table, although it is well to remember there are others: *le* (dative) = to him, to her; *les* (dative) = to them (masculine and feminine). In the accusative, *le* = him (only), e. g., *le veo,* I see him (only): *la* = her (or 'it,' feminine), e. g., I see her, *la veo;* I see it (pen), *la veo; lo* = it (masculine or neuter), e. g., I see it (book), *lo veo;* I believe it, *lo creo; las* = them (persons or things, feminine), e. g., I see them (women or pens), *las veo.*

RULES FOR THE POSITION OF TWO OBJECTIVE PRONOUNS

125. A verb may have two pronouns as objects, one direct (accusative), the other indirect (dative). When the direct object is a pronoun of the third person, they appear together before the verb (except in the infinitive, present participle, and imperative affirmative, when they are added to and form one with the verb, which must have a written accent when necessary to preserve original tonic accent). The dative precedes the accusative; except that *se* always stands first, whatever be its case: *él me lo da; dámelo; se me escapó; déselo V.*

126. When the direct object is a pronoun of the first or second person, or is a reflexive pronoun, the accusative stands before the verb and the dative follows the verb and assumes the prepositional form (except in the infinitive, present participle and imperative affirmative, when they are added to the verb, the accusative preceding the dative: *réndeteme tú; rendiéndoteme; rendérteme*): *te enviarán á mi; me enviarán a tí; me han dirigido á él; se dirije á mí.*

127. If both pronouns are of the third person, the dative *le, les,* is written *se* for euphony; this *se* must not be confused with the reflexive *se: le lo = se lo; le la = se la; le los = se los; le las = se las; les lo = se lo,* etc. *No se lo permiten,* they do not permit him (it to him).

128. CONJUGATION OF THE (ACCUSATIVE) REFLEXIVE VERB **LAVARSE** = TO WASH ONE'S SELF

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **lavarse**, to wash one's self. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lavándose**, washing one's self. PAST PARTICIPLE: **lavado**, washed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

yo me lavo	I wash myself (do wash myself, am washing myself)
tú te lavas	thou washest thyself
él se lava	he washes himself
V. se lava	your honor washes himself
nosotros nos lavamos	we wash ourselves
vosotros os laváis	ye wash yourselves
ellos se lavan	they wash themselves
VV. se lavan	your honors wash themselves

Imperfect

yo me lavaba	I was washing myself	*or* used to wash myself, etc.
tú te lavabas	thou wast washing thyself	
él se lavaba	he was washing himself	
V. se lavaba	your honor was washing himself	
nosotros nos lavábamos	we were washing ourselves	
vosotros os lavabais	ye were washing yourselves	
ellos se lavaban	they were washing themselves	
VV. se lavaban	your honors were washing themselves	

Past Definite

yo me lavé	I washed myself
tú te lavaste	thou didst wash thyself
él se lavó	he washed himself
V se lavó	your honor washed himself
nosotros nos lavamos	we washed ourselves
vosotros os lavasteis	ye washed yourselves
ellos se lavaron	they washed themselves
VV. se lavaron	your honors washed themselves

Future

yo me lavaré	I shall wash myself
tú te lavarás	thou wilt wash thyself
él se lavará	he will wash himself
V. se lavará	your honor will wash himself
nosotros nos lavaremos	we shall wash ourselves
vosotros os lavaréis	ye will wash yourselves
ellos se lavarán	they will wash themselves
VV. se lavarán	your honors will wash themselves

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

yo me lave	that I wash myself	*or* may wash myself, etc.
tú te laves	that thou wash thyself	
él se lave	that he wash himself	
V. se lave	that your honor wash himself	
nosotros nos lavemos	that we wash ourselves	
vosotros os lavéis	that ye wash yourselves	
ellos se laven	that they wash themselves	
VV. se laven	that your honors wash themselves	

Imperfect (First Form)

yo me lavara	that I should wash myself	*or* washed myself, etc.
tú te lavaras	that thou shouldst wash thyself	
él se lavara	that he should wash himself	
V. se lavara	that your honor should wash himself	
nosotros nos laváramos	that we should wash ourselves	
vosotros os lavarais	that ye should wash yourselves	
ellos se lavaran	that they should wash themselves	
VV. se lavaran	that your honors should wash themselves	

Imperfect (Second Form)

yo me lavase	that I washed myself	*or* should wash myself, etc.
tú te lavases	that thou washed thyself	
él se lavase	that he washed himself	
V. se lavase	that your honor washed himself	
nosotros nos lavásemos	that we washed ourselves	
vosotros os lavaseis	that ye washed yourselves	
ellos se lavasen	that they washed themselves	
VV. se lavasen	that your honors washed themselves	

Future

yo me lavare	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	I wash myself	*or* shall wash myself, etc.
tú te lavares		thou wash thyself	
él se lavare		he wash himself	
V. se lavare		your honor wash himself	
nosotros nos laváremos		we wash ourselves	
vosotros os lavareis		ye wash yourselves	
ellos se lavaren		they wash themselves	
VV. se lavaren		your honors wash themselves	

Conditional (Consequent)			*Conditional (Antecedent)*			
yo me lavaría	I should wash myself	si	**yo me lavara**	or **yo me lavase**	if	I should wash myself
tú te lavarías	thou wouldst wash thyself		**tú te lavaras**	or **tú te lavases**		thou shouldst wash thyself
él se lavaría	he would wash himself		**él se lavara**	or **él se lavase**		he should wash himself
V. se lavaría	your honor would wash himself		**V. se lavara**	or **V. se lavase**		your honor should wash himself
nosotros nos lavaríamos	we should wash ourselves		**nos. nos laváramos**	or **nos. nos lavásemos**		we should wash ourselves
nosotros os lavaríais	ye would wash yourselves		**vos. os lavarais**	or **vos. os lavaseis**		ye should wash yourselves
ellos se lavarían	they would wash themselves		**ellos se lavaran**	or **ellos se lavasen**		they should wash themselves
VV. se lavarían	your honors would wash themselves		**VV. se lavaran**	or **VV. se lavasen**		your honors should wash themselves

or washed myself, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

lávate tú	wash (thou) thyself	**no te laves tú**	wash (thou) not thyself
lavaos vosotros	wash (ye) yourselves	**no os lavéis vosotros**	wash (ye) not yourselves
láveme yo	let me wash myself	**no me lave yo**	let me not wash myself
lávese él	let him wash himself	**no se lave él**	let him not wash himself
lávese V.	wash yourself, your honor	**no se lave V.**	wash not yourself, your honor
lavémonos nosotros	let us wash ourselves	**no nos lavemos nosotros**	let us not wash ourselves
lávense ellos	let them wash themselves	**no se laven ellos**	let them not wash themselves
lávense VV.	wash yourselves, your honors	**no se laven VV.**	wash not yourselves, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haberse lavado,** to have washed one's self.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose lavado,** having washed one's self.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**yo me he lavado,** etc.	I have washed myself, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**yo me había lavado,** etc.	I had washed myself, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**yo me hube lavado,** etc.	(when) I had washed myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**yo me habré lavado,** etc.	I shall have washed myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**yo me habría lavado,** etc.	I should have washed myself, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**yo me haya lavado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have washed myself, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**yo me hubiera lavado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had washed myself, etc.
Comp. Imp (2d form)	**yo me hubiese lavado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have washed myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**yo me hubiere lavado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have washed myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**yo me hubiera** or **hubiese lavado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had washed myself, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner :

alabarse, to praise one's self. **consolarse,** to console one's self. **cubrirse,** to cover one's self. **engañarse,** to deceive one's self. **mirarse,** to see one's self.
amarse, to love one's self. **cortarse,** to cut one's self. **culparse,** to blame one's self. **meterse,** to put one's self. **quemarse,** to burn one's self.

NEGATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATIONS

(These are the same as those of any verb having objective pronouns.)

129. The negative conjugation of a reflexive or a reciprocal verb is formed by inserting the adverb *no*, not, before the object pronouns in both the simple and the compound tenses. In the imperative negative the object pronouns stand before the verb.

130. The interrogative and the negative-interrogative conjugations occur only in the tenses of the indicative mood.

131. The interrogative conjugation is formed by placing the subject after the verb in simple tenses, and after the past participle in compound tenses; an inverted question-mark is placed at the beginning and a direct question-mark at the end of the expression.

132. The negative-interrogative conjugation is the same as the interrogative, except that *no* precedes the object pronoun in both simple and compound tenses. The following will illustrate fully:

SIMPLE TENSES

NEGATIVE CONJUGATION		INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION
Present Indicative		*Present Indicative*
(*yo*)	**no me lavo**	¿ **me lavo** (*yo*) ?
(*tú*)	**no te lavas**	¿ **te lavas** (*tú*) ?
(*él*)	**no se lava**	¿ **se lava** (*él*) ?
V.	**no se lava**	¿ **se lava** *V.* ?
(*nosotros*)	**no nos lavamos**	¿ **nos lavamos** (*nosotros*) ?
(*vosotros*)	**no os laváis**	¿ **os laváis** (*vosotros*) ?
(*ellos*)	**no se lavan**	¿ **se lavan** (*ellos*) ?
VV.	**no se lavan**	¿ **se lavan** *VV.* ?
I do not wash myself, etc.		Do I wash myself? etc.

NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

¿ **no me lavo** (*yo*) ?
¿ **no te lavas** (*tú*) ?
¿ **no se lava** (*él*) ?
¿ **no se lava** *V.* ?
¿ **no nos lavamos** (*nosotros*) ?

¿ **no os laváis** (*vosotros*) ?
¿ **no se lavan** (*ellos*) ?
¿ **no se lavan** *VV.* ?
Do I not wash myself? etc.

COMPOUND TENSES

NEGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

(*yo*)	**no me he lavado**	I have not washed myself
(*tú*)	**no te has lavado**	Thou hast not washed thyself
(*él*)	**no se ha lavado**	He has not washed himself
V.	**no se ha lavado**	Your honor has not washed himself
(*nosotros*)	**no nos hemos lavado**	We have not washed ourselves
(*vosotros*)	**no os habéis lavado**	Ye have not washed yourselves
(*ellos*)	**no se han lavado**	They have not washed themselves
VV.	**no se han lavado**	Your honors have not washed themselves

INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

¿ **me he lavado** (*yo*) ?	Have I washed myself?
¿ **te has lavado** (*tú*) ?	Hast thou washed thyself?
¿ **se ha lavado** (*él*) ?	Has he washed himself?
¿ **se ha lavado** *V.* ?	Has your honor washed himself?
¿ **nos hemos lavado** (*nosotros*) ?	Have we washed ourselves?
¿ **os habéis lavado** (*vosotros*)	Have ye washed yourselves?
¿ **se han lavado** (*ellos*) ?	Have they washed themselves?
¿ **se han lavado** *VV.* ?	Have your honors washed themselves?

NEGATIVE-INTERROGATIVE CONJUGATION

Present Indicative

¿ **no me he lavado** (*yo*) ?	Have I not washed myself?
¿ **no te has lavado** (*tú*) ?	Hast thou not washed thyself?
¿ **no se ha lavado** (*él*) ?	Has he not washed himself?
¿ **no se ha lavado** *V.* ?	Has your honor not washed himself?
¿ **no nos hemos lavado** (*nosotros*) ?	Have we not washed ourselves?
¿ **no os habéis lavado** (*vosotros*) ?	Have ye not washed yourselves?
¿ **no se han lavado** (*ellos*) ?	Have they not washed themselves?
¿ **no se han lavado** *VV.* ?	Have your honors not washed themselves?

133. THE (DATIVE) REFLEXIVE VERB **PERMITIRSE** = TO ALLOW, PERMIT (TO) ONE'S SELF

SIMPLE TENSES

INFIN.: **permitirse,** to {allow / permit} to one's self. PRESENT PARTIC.: **permitiéndose,** {allowing / permitting} to one's self. PAST PARTIC.: **permitido,** permitted.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

me permito	I permit myself (do permit myself, am permitting myself)
te permites	thou dost permit thyself
se permite	he permits himself
V. se permite	your honor permits himself
nos permitimos	we permit ourselves
os permitís	ye permit yourselves
se permiten	they permit themselves
VV. se permiten	your honors permit themselves

Imperfect

me permitía	I was permitting myself	*or* used to permit myself, etc.
te permitías	thou wast permitting thyself	
se permitía	he was permitting himself	
V. se permitía	your honor was permitting himself	
nos permitíamos	we were permitting ourselves	
os permitíais	ye were permitting yourselves	
se permitían	they were permitting themselves	
VV. se permitían	your honors were permitting themselves	

Past Definite

me permití	I permitted myself
te permitiste	thou didst permit thyself
se permitió	he permitted himself
V. se permitió	your honor permitted himself
nos permitimos	we permitted ourselves
os permitisteis	ye permitted yourselves
se permitieron	they permitted themselves
VV. se permitieron	your honors permitted themselves

Future

me permitiré	I shall permit myself
te permitirás	thou wilt permit thyself
se permitirá	he will permit himself
V. se permitirá	your honor will permit himself
nos permitiremos	we shall permit ourselves
os permitiréis	ye will permit yourselves
se permitirán	they will permit themselves
VV. se permitirán	your honors will permit themselves

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

me permita	that I permit myself	*or* may permit myself, etc.
te permitas	that thou permit thyself	
se permita	that he permit himself	
V. se permita	that your honor permit himself	
nos permitamos	that we permit ourselves	
os permitáis	that ye permit yourselves	
se permitan	that they permit themselves	
VV. se permitan	that your honors permit themselves	

Imperfect (First Form)

me permitiera	that I should permit myself	*or* permitted myself, etc.
te permitieras	that thou shouldst permit thyself	
se permitiera	that he should permit himself	
V. se permitiera	that your honor should permit himself	
nos permitiéramos	that we should permit ourselves	
os permitierais	that ye should permit yourselves	
se permitieran	that they should permit themselves	
VV. se permitieran	that your honors should permit themselves	

Imperfect (Second Form)

me permitiese	that I permitted myself	*or* should permit myself, etc.
te permitieses	that thou permitted thyself	
se permitiese	that he permitted himself	
V. se permitiese	that your honor permitted himself	
nos permitiésemos	that we permitted ourselves	
os permitieseis	that ye permitted yourselves	
se permitiesen	that they permitted themselves	
VV. se permitiesen	that your honors permitted themselves	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**me permitiere**	if, when, while, although, etc. I permit myself	*or* shall permit myself, etc.
	te permitieres	thou permit thyself	
	se permitiere	he permit himself	
	V. se permitiere	your honor permit himself	
	nos permitiéremos	we permit ourselves	
	os permitiereis	ye permit yourselves	
	se permitieren	they permit themselves	
	VV. se permitieren	your honors permit themselves	

Conditional (Consequent)

me permitiría	I should permit myself
te permitirías	thou wouldst permit thyself
se permitiría	he would permit himself
V. se permitiría	your honor would permit himself
nos permitiríamos	we should permit ourselves
os permitiríais	ye would permit yourselves
se permitirían	they would permit themselves
VV. se permitirían	your honors would permit themselves

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

me permitiera	or **me permitiese**
te permitieras	or **te permitieses**
se permitiera	or **se permitiese**
V. se permitiera	or **V. se permitiese**
nos permitiéramos	or **nos permitiésemos**
os permitierais	or **os permitieseis**
se permitieran	or **se permitiesen**
VV. se permitieran	or **VV. se permitiesen**

if

I should permit myself	*or* permitted myself, etc.
thou shouldst permit thyself	
he should permit himself	
your honor should permit himself	
we should permit ourselves	
ye should permit yourselves	
they should permit themselves	
your honors should permit themselves	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

permítete	permit (thou) thyself
permitíos	permit (ye) yourselves
permítame	let me permit myself
permítase	let him permit himself
permítase V.	permit yourself, your honor
permitámonos	let us permit ourselves
permítanse	let them permit themselves
permítanse VV.	permit yourselves, your honors

no te permitas	do (thou) not permit thyself
no os permitáis	do (ye) not permit yourselves
no me permita	let me not permit myself
no se permita	let him not permit himself
no se permita V.	do not permit yourself, your honor
no nos permitamos	let us not permit ourselves
no se permitan	let them not permit themselves
no se permitan VV.	do not permit yourselves, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFIN.: **haberse permitido,** to have permitted to one's self.

COMP. PRES. PARTIC.: **habiéndose permitido,** having permitted to one's self.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me he permitido,** etc.	I have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**me había permitido,** etc.	I had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**me hube permitido,** etc.	(when) I had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me habré permitido,** etc.	I shall have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me habría permitido,** etc.	I should have permitted myself, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me haya permitido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**me hubiera permitido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**me hubiese permitido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me hubiere permitido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have permitted myself, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me hubiera** or **hubiese permitido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had permitted myself, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aludirse, to allude to one's self.
arrogarse, to arrogate to one's self.
atribuirse, to attribute to one's self.
cantarse, to sing to one's self.
comprarse, to buy for one's self.
confesarse, to acknowledge to one's self.
escribirse, to write to one's self.
figurarse, to imagine (to figure to one's self).
hablarse, to speak to one's self.
leerse, to read to one's self.
murmurarse, to murmur to one's self.
persuadirse, to persuade one's self.
prestarse, to lend to one's self.
preguntarse, to ask of one's self.
prometerse, to promise to one's self.
reirse, to laugh to one's self.
representarse, to represent to one's self.
someterse, to submit to one's self.

134. CONJUGATION OF THE PERMANENT REFLEXIVE VERB **ALEGRARSE** = TO REJOICE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **alegrarse,** to rejoice. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **alegrándose,** rejoicing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **alegrado,** rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

me alegro	I rejoice (do rejoice, am rejoicing)
te alegras	thou dost rejoice
se alegra	he rejoices
V. se alegra	your honor rejoices
nos alegramos	we rejoice
os alegráis	ye rejoice
se alegran	they rejoice
VV. se alegran	your honors rejoice

Imperfect

me alegraba	I was rejoicing	or used to rejoice.
te alegrabas	thou wast rejoicing	
se alegraba	he was rejoicing	
V. se alegraba	your honor was rejoicing	
nos alegrábamos	we were rejoicing	
os alegrabais	ye were rejoicing	
se alegraban	they were rejoicing	
VV. se alegraban	your honors were rejoicing	

Past Definite

me alegré	I rejoiced
te alegraste	thou didst rejoice
se alegró	he rejoiced
V. se alegró	your honor rejoiced
nos alegramos	we rejoiced
os alegrasteis	ye rejoiced
se alegraron	they rejoiced
VV. se alegraron	your honors rejoiced

Future

me alegraré	I shall rejoice
te alegrarás	thou wilt rejoice
se alegrará	he will rejoice
V. se alegrará	your honor will rejoice
nos alegraremos	we shall rejoice
os alegraréis	ye will rejoice
se alegrarán	they will rejoice
VV. se alegrarán	your honors will rejoice

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

me alegre	that I rejoice	or may rejoice, etc.
te alegres	that thou rejoice	
se alegre	that he rejoice	
V. se alegre	that your honor rejoice	
nos alegremos	that we rejoice	
os alegréis	that ye rejoice	
se alegren	that they rejoice	
VV. se alegren	that your honors rejoice	

Imperfect (First Form)

me alegrara	that I should rejoice	or rejoiced.
te alegraras	that thou shouldst rejoice	
se alegrara	that he should rejoice	
V. se alegrara	that your honor should rejoice	
nos alegráramos	that we should rejoice	
os alegrarais	that ye should rejoice	
se alegraran	that they should rejoice	
VV. se alegraran	that your honors should rejoice	

Imperfect (Second Form)

me alegrase	that I rejoiced	or should rejoice, etc.
te alegrases	that thou rejoiced	
se alegrase	that he rejoiced	
V. se alegrase	that your honor rejoiced	
nos alegrásemos	that we rejoiced	
os alegraseis	that ye rejoiced	
se alegrasen	that they rejoiced	
VV. se alegrasen	that your honors rejoiced	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**me alegrare**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I rejoice	or shall rejoice, etc.
	te alegrares		thou rejoice	
	se alegrare		he rejoice	
	V. se alegrare		your honor rejoice	
	nos alegráremos		we rejoice	
	os alegrareis		ye rejoice	
	se alegraren		they rejoice	
	VV. se alegraren		your honors rejoice	

Conditional (Consequent)

me alegraría	I should rejoice
te alegrarías	thou wouldst rejoice
se alegraría	he would rejoice
V. se alegraría	your honor would rejoice
nos alegraríamos	we should rejoice
os alegraríais	ye would rejoice
se alegrarían	they would rejoice
VV. se alegrarían	your honors would rejoice

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**me alegrara**	or **me alegrase**	if	I should rejoice
	te alegraras	or **te alegrases**		thou shouldst rejoice
	se alegrara	or **se alegrase**		he should rejoice
	V. se alegrara	or **V. se alegrase**		your honor should rejoice
	nos alegráramos	or **nos alegrásemos**		we should rejoice
	os alegrarais	or **os alegraseis**		ye should rejoice
	se alegraran	or **se alegrasen**		they should rejoice
	VV. se alegraran	or **VV. se alegrasen**		your honors should rejoice

or rejoiced.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

alégrate	rejoice (thou)	**no te alegres**	rejoice (thou) not
alegraos	rejoice (ye)	**no os alegréis**	rejoice (ye) not
alégreme	let me rejoice	**no me alegre**	let me not rejoice
alégrese	let him rejoice	**no se alegre**	let him not rejoice
alégrese V.	rejoice, your honor	**no se alegre V.**	rejoice not, your honor
alegrémonos	let us rejoice	**no nos alegremos**	let us not rejoice
alégrense	let them rejoice	**no se alegren**	let them not rejoice
alégrense VV.	rejoice, your honors	**no se alegren VV.**	rejoice not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haberse alegrado,** to have rejoiced.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose alegrado,** having rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me he alegrado,** etc.	I have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**me había alegrado,** etc.	I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**me hube alegrado,** etc.	(when) I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me habré alegrado,** etc.	I shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me habría alegrado,** etc.	I should have rejoiced, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me haya alegrado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**me hubiera alegrado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**me hubiese alegrado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me hubiere alegrado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me hubiera** or **hubiese alegrado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had rejoiced, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abstenerse de, to abstain from.
achisparse, to get tipsy.
airarse, to grow angry.
arrepentirse de, to repent of.
ausentarse, to absent one's self.
burlarse, to laugh at.
desatufarse, to grow calm.
dignarse, to deign to.
enfoscarse, to be uneasy.
gloriarse, to glory.
jactarse, to boast.
quejarse, to complain.

135. IMPERS. CONJ. OF THE PERMANENT REFLEXIVE VERB **ALEGRARSE** = TO REJOICE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **alegrarse,** to rejoice. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **alegrándose,** rejoicing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **alegrado,** rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

se me alegra	I rejoice (do rejoice, am rejoicing)
se te alegra	thou rejoicest
se le alegra	he rejoices
se le alegra á V.	your honor rejoices
se nos alegra	we rejoice
se os alegra	ye rejoice
se les alegra	they rejoice
se les alegra á VV.	your honors rejoice

Imperfect

se me alegraba	I was rejoicing	*or* used to rejoice.
se te alegraba	thou wast rejoicing	
se le alegraba	he was rejoicing	
se le alegraba á V.	your honor was rejoicing	
se nos alegraba	we were rejoicing	
se os alegraba	ye were rejoicing	
se les alegraba	they were rejoicing	
se les alegraba á VV.	your honors were rejoicing	

Past Definite

se me alegró	I rejoiced
se te alegró	thou didst rejoice
se le alegró	he rejoiced
se le alegró á V.	your honor rejoiced
se nos alegró	we rejoiced
se os alegró	ye rejoiced
se les alegró	they rejoiced
se les alegró á VV.	your honors rejoiced

Future

se me alegrará	I shall rejoice
se te alegrará	thou wilt rejoice
se le alegrará	he will rejoice
se le alegrará á V.	your honor will rejoice
se nos alegrará	we shall rejoice
se os alegrará	ye will rejoice
se les alegrará	they will rejoice
se les alegrará á VV.	your honors will rejoice

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

se me alegre	that I rejoice	*or* may rejoice, etc.
se te alegre	that thou rejoice	
se le alegre	that he rejoice	
se le alegre á V.	that your honor rejoice	
se nos alegre	that we rejoice	
se os alegre	that ye rejoice	
se les alegre	that they rejoice	
se les alegre á VV.	that your honors rejoice	

Imperfect (First Form)

se me alegrara	that I should rejoice	*or* rejoiced.
se te alegrara	that thou shouldst rejoice	
se le alegrara	that he should rejoice	
se le alegrara á V.	that your honor should rejoice	
se nos alegrara	that we should rejoice	
se os alegrara	that ye should rejoice	
se les alegrara	that they should rejoice	
se les alegrara á VV.	that your honors should rejoice	

Imperfect (Second Form)

se me alegrase	that I rejoiced	*or* should rejoice, etc.
se te alegrase	that thou rejoiced	
se le alegrase	that he rejoiced	
se le alegrase á V.	that your honor rejoiced	
se nos alegrase	that we rejoiced	
se os alegrase	that ye rejoiced	
se les alegrase	that they rejoiced	
se les alegrase á VV.	that your honors rejoiced	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**se me alegrare**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I rejoice	*or* shall rejoice, etc.
	se te alegrare		thou rejoice	
	se le alegrare		he rejoice	
	se le alegrare á V.		your honor rejoice	
	se nos alegrare		we rejoice	
	se os alegrare		ye rejoice	
	se les alegrare		they rejoice	
	se les alegrare á VV.		your honors rejoice	

Conditional (Consequent)

se me alegraría	I should rejoice
se te alegraría	thou wouldst rejoice
se le alegraría	he would rejoice
se le alegraría á V.	your honor would rejoice
se nos alegraría	we should rejoice
se os alegraría	ye would rejoice
se les alegraría	they would rejoice
se les alegraría á VV.	your honors would rejoice

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**se me alegrara**	or **se me alegrase**	if I should rejoice, *or* rejoiced.
	se te alegrara	or **se te alegrase**	thou shouldst rejoice
	se le alegrara	or **se le alegrase**	he should rejoice
	se le alegrara á V.	or **se le alegrase á V.**	your honor should rejo ce
	se nos alegrara	or **se nos alegrase**	we should rejoice
	se os alegrara	or **se os alegrase**	ye should rejoice
	se les alegrara	or **se les alegrase**	they should rejoice
	se les alegrara á VV.	or **se les alegrase á VV.**	your honors should rejoice

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative (Literally) *

alégrasete	let it rejoice itself to thee	**no se te alegre**	do not let it rejoice itself to thee
alégraseos	let it rejoice itself to ye	**no se os alegre**	do not let it rejoice itself to ye
alégreseme	let it rejoice itself to me	**no se me alegre**	let it not rejoice itself to me
alégresele	let it rejoice itself to him	**no se le alegre**	let it not rejoice itself to him
alégresele á V.	let it rejoice itself to your honor	**no se le alegre á V.**	let it not rejoice itself to your honor
alégresenos	let it rejoice itself to us	**no se nos alegre**	let it not rejoice itself to us
alégreseles	let it rejoice itself to them	**no se les alegre**	let it not rejoice itself to them
alégreseles á VV.	let it rejoice itself to your honors	**no se les alegre á VV.**	let it not rejoice itself to your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haberse alegrado,** to have rejoiced.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose alegrado,** having rejoiced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**se me ha alegrado,** etc.	I have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**se me había alegrado,** etc.	I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**se me hubo alegrado,** etc.	(when) I had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**se me habrá alegrado,** etc.	I shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**se me habría alegrado,** etc.	I should have rejoiced, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**se me haya alegrado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**se me hubiera alegrado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**se me hubiese alegrado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**se me hubiere alegrado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have rejoiced, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**se me hubiera** or **hubiese alegrado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had rejoiced, etc.

* The free translation will be found on p. 87.

IMPERSONAL REFLEXIVE USED FOR THE PERSONAL REFLEXIVE

136. Permanent reflexive verbs, besides being conjugated in all the persons and numbers, may also be conjugated impersonally: that is, with the reflexive pronoun *se* throughout, and the verb in the third person singular of each tense, the respective dative pronouns being used to distinguish person and number, as follows:

se me alegra, alegraba, etc.	I rejoice, was rejoicing, etc.
se te alegra, alegraba, etc.	thou rejoicest, wast rejoicing, etc.
se le alegra, alegraba, etc.	he rejoices, was rejoicing, etc.
se le alegra á V., alegraba á V., etc.	your honor rejoices, was rejoicing, etc.
se nos alegra, alegraba, etc.	we rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se os alegra, alegraba, etc.	ye rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se les alegra, alegraba, etc.	they rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.
se les alegra á VV., alegraba á VV., etc.	your honors rejoice, were rejoicing, etc.

To accustom the student to this common form of expression the verb is written out in full on pages 88, 89.

The meaning is practically the same as in the personal conjugation on pages 86, 87.

The explanation of this seems to be that the Spaniard, in saying *se me alegra*, etc., really without thinking uses *se* as a subject, although it has the objective form. Just as in English, when we say "methinks I see," me is unthinkingly used as a subject, although it has the objective form, the expression being equivalent to "I think I see."

Conjugate like **abrazarse,** *p. 91.*

admirarse, to admire each other.	**educarse,** to educate each other.
afeitarse, to shave each other.	**engañarse,** to deceive each other.
ayudarse, to aid each other.	**felicitarse,** to congratulate each other.
comprenderse, to understand each other.	**interrumpirse,** to interrupt each other.
consultarse, to consult each other.	**mirarse,** to look at each other.
conocerse, to know each other.	**mostrarse,** to show to each other.
detestarse, to detest each other.	**oprimirse,** to oppress each other.
disputarse, to wrangle with each other.	**parecerse,** to resemble each other.

137. THE RECIPROCAL VERB **ABRAZARSE** = TO EMBRACE EACH OTHER (OR ONE ANOTHER)

INFINITIVE: **abrazarse,** to embrace. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **abrazándose,** embracing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **abrazado,** embraced.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

nos abrazamos	we embrace
os abrazáis	ye embrace
se abrazan	they embrace
VV. se abrazan	your honors embrace

Imperfect

nos abrazábamos	we were embracing	*or* used to embrace.
os abrazabais	ye were embracing	
se abrazaban	they were embracing	
VV. se abrazaban	your honors were embracing	

Past Definite

nos abrazamos	we embraced
os abrazasteis	ye embraced
se abrazaron	they embraced
VV. se abrazaron	your honors embraced

Future

nos abrazaremos	we shall embrace
os abrazaréis	ye will embrace
se abrazarán	they will embrace
VV. se abrazarán	your honors will embrace

Conditional (Consequent)

nos abrazaríamos	we should embrace
os abrazaríais	ye would embrace
se abrazarían	they would embrace
VV. se abrazarían	your honors would embrace

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

nos abracemos	that we embrace	*or* may embrace.
os abracéis	that ye embrace	
se abracen	that they embrace	
VV. se abracen	that your honors embrace	

Imperfect (First Form)

nos abrazáramos	that we should embrace	*or* embraced.
os abrazarais	that ye should embrace	
se abrazaran	that they should embrace	
VV. se abrazaran	that your honors should embrace	

Imperfect (Second Form)

nos abrazásemos	that we embraced	*or* should embrace.
os abrazaseis	that ye embraced	
se abrazasen	that they embraced	
VV. se abrazasen	that your honors embraced	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**nos abrazáremos**	if, when, while, although, etc.	we embrace	*or* shall embrace.
	os abrazareis		ye embrace	
	se abrazaren		they embrace	
	VV. se abrazaren		your honors embrace	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**nos abrazáramos** or **abrazásemos**	if	we should embrace	*or* embraced.
	os abrazarais or **abrazaseis**		ye should embrace	
	se abrazaran or **abrazasen**		they should embrace	
	VV. se abrazaran or **abrazasen**		your honors should embrace	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

abrazaos	embrace (ye)	**no os abracéis**	do (ye) not embrace
abracémonos	let us embrace	**no nos abracemos**	let us not embrace
abrácense	let them embrace	**no se abracen**	let them not embrace
abrácense VV.	embrace, your honors	**no se abracen VV.**	do not embrace, your honors

COMP. INFINIT.: **haberse abrazado,** to have embraced each other.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Pres.	**nos hemos abrazado,** etc.	we have embraced, etc.
Imp.	**nos habíamos abrazado,** etc.	we had embraced, etc.
Past Def.	**nos hubimos abrazado,** etc.	(when) we had embraced, etc.
Fut.	**nos habremos abrazado,** etc.	we shall have embraced, etc.
Cond.	**nos habríamos abrazado,** etc.	we should have embraced, etc.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose abrazado,** having embraced each other.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Pres.	**nos hayamos abrazado,** etc.	that we have *or* may have embraced, etc.
Imp. (1st)	**nos hubiéramos abrazado,** etc.	that we should have *or* had embraced, etc.
Imp. (2d)	**nos hubiésemos abrazado,** etc.	that we had *or* should have embraced, etc.
Fut.	**nos hubiéremos abrazado,** etc.	that we have *or* shall have embraced, etc.
Cond.	**nos hubiéramos** or **hubiésemos abrazado,** etc.	that we should have *or* had embraced, etc.

138. CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB SER = TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ser**, to be. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **siendo**, being. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sido**, been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	soy	I am
	eres	thou art
	es	he is
V.	**es**	your honor is
	somos	we are
	sois	ye are
	son	they are
VV.	**son**	your honors are

Imperfect

	era	I was
	eras	thou wast
	era	he was
V.	**era**	your honor was
	éramos	we were
	erais	ye were
	eran	they were
VV.	**eran**	your honors were

or used to be.

Past Definite (when)

	fuí	I was
	fuiste	thou wast
	fué	he was
V.	**fué**	your honor was
	fuimos	we were
	fuisteis	ye were
	fueron	they were
VV.	**fueron**	your honors were

Future

	seré	I shall be
	serás	thou wilt be
	será	he will be
V.	**será**	your honor will be
	seremos	we shall be
	seréis	ye will be
	serán	they will be
VV.	**serán**	your honors will be

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	sea	that I be
	seas	that thou be
	sea	that he be
V.	**sea**	that your honor be
	seamos	that we be
	seáis	that ye be
	sean	that they be
VV.	**sean**	that your honors be

or may be, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	fuera	that I should be
	fueras	that thou shouldst be
	fuera	that he should be
V.	**fuera**	that your honor should be
	fuéramos	that we should be
	fuerais	that ye should be
	fueran	that they should be
VV.	**fueran**	that your honors should be

or were.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	fuese	that I were
	fueses	that thou were
	fuese	that he were
V.	**fuese**	that your honor were
	fuésemos	that we were
	fueseis	that ye were
	fuesen	that they were
VV.	**fuesen**	that your honors were

or should be, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	fuere	I be
	fueres	thou be
	fuere	he be
V.	**fuere**	your honor be
	fuéremos	we be
	fuereis	ye be
	fueren	they be
VV.	**fueren**	your honors be

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall be.

Conditional (Consequent)

	sería	I should be
	serías	thou wouldst be
	sería	he would be
V.	**sería**	your honor would be
	seríamos	we should be
	seríais	ye would be
	serían	they would be
VV.	**serían**	your honors would be

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**fuera**	or	**fuese**	if	I should be
		fueras	or	**fueses**		thou shouldst be
		fuera	or	**fuese**		he should be
	V.	**fuera**	or V.	**fuese**		your honor should be
		fuéramos	or	**fuésemos**		we should be
		fuerais	or	**fueseis**		ye should be
		fueran	or	**fuesen**		they should be
	VV.	**fueran**	or VV.	**fuesen**		your honors should be

or were.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

sé	be (thou)	**no seas**	be (thou) not
sed	be (ye)	**no seáis**	be (ye) not
sea	let me be	**no sea**	let me not be
sea	let him be	**no sea**	let him not be
sea V.	be, your honor	**no sea** V.	be not, your honor
seamos	let us be	**no seamos**	let us not be
sean	let them be	**no sean**	let them not be
sean VV.	be, your honors	**no sean** VV.	be not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sido,** to have been.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sido,** having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sido,** etc.	I have been, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sido,** etc.	I had been, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube sido,** etc.	(when) I had been, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sido,** etc.	I shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sido,** etc.	I should have been, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese sido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have been, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have been, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been, etc.

There are two verbs meaning 'to be,' **ser** and **estar**. **Ser** is used: first, when the attribute expressed by the predicate *adjective* is essential and inherent — **not** temporary or accidental. Hence a predicate noun always requires **ser**. Second, to form the true passive voice.

139. CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERB **SER AMADO** = TO BE LOVED

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ser** { **amado -a** / **amados -as** } to be loved. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **siendo** { **amado -a** / **amados -as** } being loved. PAST PART.: **amado -a -os -as,** loved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	soy amado -a	I am loved
	eres amado -a	thou art loved
	es amado -a	he is loved
V.	**es amado -a**	your honor is loved
	somos amados -as	we are loved
	sois amados -as	ye are loved
	son amados -as	they are loved
VV.	**son amados -as**	your honors are loved

Imperfect

	era amado -a	I was being loved	*or* used to be loved.
	eras amado -a	thou wast being loved	
	era amado -a	he was being loved	
V.	**era amado -a**	your honor was being loved	
	éramos amados -as	we were being loved	
	erais amados -as	ye were being loved	
	eran amados -as	they were being loved	
VV.	**eran amados -as**	your honors were being loved	

Past Definite

	fuí amado -a	I was loved
	fuiste amado -a	thou wast loved
	fué amado -a	he was loved
V.	**fué amado -a**	your honor was loved
	fuimos amados -as	we were loved
	fuisteis amados -as	ye were loved
	fueron amados -as	they were loved
VV.	**fueron amados -as**	your honors were loved

Future

	seré amado -a	I shall be loved
	serás amado -a	thou wilt be loved
	será amado -a	he will be loved
V.	**será amado -a**	your honor will be loved
	seremos amados -as	we shall be loved
	seréis amados -as	ye will be loved
	serán amados -as	they will be loved
VV.	**serán amados -as**	your honors will be loved

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	sea amado -a	that I be loved	*or* may be loved, etc.
	seas amado -a	that thou be loved	
	sea amado -a	that he be loved	
V.	**sea amado -a**	that your honor be loved	
	seamos amados -as	that we be loved	
	seáis amados -as	that ye be loved	
	sean amados -as	that they be loved	
VV.	**sean amados -as**	that your honors be loved	

Imperfect (First Form)

	fuera amado -a	that I should be loved	*or* were loved.
	fueras amado -a	that thou shouldst be loved	
	fuera amado -a	that he should be loved	
V.	**fuera amado -a**	that your honor should be loved	
	fuéramos amados -as	that we should be loved	
	fuerais amados -as	that ye should be loved	
	fueran amados -as	that they should be loved	
VV.	**fueran amados -as**	that your honors should be loved	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	fuese amado -a	that I were loved	*or* should be loved, etc.
	fueses amado -a	that thou were loved	
	fuese amado -a	that he were loved	
V.	**fuese amado -a**	that your honor were loved	
	fuésemos amados -as	that we were loved	
	fueseis amados -as	that ye were loved	
	fuesen amados -as	that they were loved	
VV.	**fuesen amados -as**	that your honors were loved	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.			if, when, while, although, etc.	
	fuere amado -a		I be loved	*or* shall be loved.
	fueres amado -a		thou be loved	
	fuere amado -a		he be loved	
V.	**fuere amado -a**		your honor be loved	
	fuéremos amados -as		we be loved	
	fuereis amados -as		ye be loved	
	fueren amados -as		they be loved	
VV.	**fueren amados -as**		your honors be loved	

Conditional (Consequent)			*Conditional (Antecedent)*				
sería amado -a	I should be loved	si	**fuera amado -a** or **fuese amado -a**			if	I should be loved / *or* were loved.
serías amado -a	thou wouldst be loved		**fueras amado -a** or **fueses amado -a**				thou shouldst be loved
sería amado -a	he would be loved		**fuera amado -a** or **fuese amado -a**				he should be loved
V. **sería amado -a**	your honor would be loved		V. **fuera amado -a** or V. **fuese amado -a**				your honor should be loved
seríamos amados -as	we should be loved		**fuéramos amados -as** or **fuésemos amados -as**				we should be loved
seríais amados -as	ye would be loved		**fuerais amados -as** or **fueseis amados -as**				ye should be loved
serían amados -as	they would be loved		**fueran amados -as** or **fuesen amados -as**				they should be loved
VV. **serían amados -as**	your honors would be loved		VV. **fueran amados -as** or VV **fuesen amados -as**				your honors should be loved

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sé amado -a	be (thou) loved	**no seas amado -a**	be (thou) not loved
sed amados -as	be (ye) loved	**no seáis amados -as**	be (ye) not loved
sea amado -a	let me be loved	**no sea amado -a**	let me not be loved
sea amado -a	let him, her be loved	**no sea amado -a**	let him, her not be loved
sea amado -a V.	be loved, your honor	**no sea amado -a V.**	be not loved, your honor
seamos amados -as	let us be loved	**no seamos amados -as**	let us not be loved
sean amados -as	let them be loved	**no sean amados -as**	let them not be loved
sean amados -as VV.	be loved, your honors	**no sean amados -as VV.**	be not loved, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber sido** {**amado -a** / **amados -as**} to have been loved.

COMP. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sido** {**amado -a** / **amados -as**} having been loved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sido amado -a,** etc.	I have been loved, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sido amado -a,** etc.	I had been loved, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube sido amado -a,** etc.	(when) I had been loved, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sido amado -a,** etc.	I shall have been loved, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sido amado -a,** etc.	I should have been loved, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sido amado -a,** etc.	that I have *or* may have been loved, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sido amado -a,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been loved, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese sido amado -a,** etc.	that I had *or* should have been loved, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sido amado -a,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have been loved, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sido amado -a,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been loved, etc.

NOTE. — The passive voice in Spanish is formed by adding the past participle of an active transitive verb to the different forms of the auxiliary verb **ser,** to be. The past participle varies like any adjective in **o,** and agrees with the subject in gender and number.

It should be remembered that the past participle of a verb conjugated with **haber** never varies; hence **sido** is invariable. But, in the compound tenses, **amado** varies, since it is conjugated with **ser,** and not with **haber, he sido** being the compound present of **ser.**

REFLEXIVE SUBSTITUTE FOR THE PASSIVE

140. In Spanish, as in French, the use of the passive is avoided as much as possible. In its place they prefer to use the verb reflexively, or else in the indefinite third person plural, with no subject expressed. For example, 'the books are sold,' *se venden los libros*, in place of *los libros son vendidos;* although the latter is correct grammatically and could be used. And again, 'it is said' = *se dice* or *dicen;* the latter, *dicen*, is the exact equivalent for our English 'they say,' and is used in the same way.

141. The use of the reflexive form for the passive comes under two heads:

1. When the subject of the passive verb is a thing or an inanimate object, then the reflexive substitute has the same subject as the passive verb. For example, 'the houses are sold,' *se venden las casas;* 'Spanish is spoken here,' *aquí se habla español;* 'it is said,' *se dice;* 'it has been said that they would come,' *se ha dicho que vendrían.* In these cases, as the subject is a thing, no possible ambiguity can arise in the use of the reflexive in place of the passive, for the literal translation of *se venden las casas* is, 'the houses sell themselves'; and, as it is impossible for the houses to sell themselves, the real meaning can only be, 'the houses are sold.'

2. When the subject of the passive verb is a person or an animate object, then the subject of the passive verb cannot be made the subject of the reflexive substitute on account of the ambiguity that would arise. For example, 'the man was killed,' if made reflexive with the subject the same, would be, *se mató el hombre*, which would mean 'the man killed himself,' and not 'the man was killed.' In this case the subject of the passive verb is made the *object* of the reflexive verb, and we have *se mató al hombre.* This can be explained or translated literally in two ways: *first*, considering the verb as impersonal, it would be, 'it killed itself to the man,' *se* being the direct object and man the indirect object; *second*, the subject of the reflexive verb may be considered to be *uno*, *alguien*, or some

other indefinite subject, man being the direct object, and *se* the indirect object and at the same time a superfluous or ethical dative, in which case the literal translation would be, 'one (or somebody) killed the man for himself.' Either explanation of this construction is permissible and will explain the variation in the object pronouns which are sometimes direct and sometimes indirect in form; for example, *le* and *les* are always used in place of *lo* and *los*, but in all other cases the direct objective forms are used. Furthermore, in this construction the redundant pronouns are almost always used:

The man was seen, *se le vió al hombre*
The men were seen, *se les vió á los hombres*
The woman was seen, *se la vió á la mujer*
The women were seen, *se las vió á las mujeres*
They were seen, *se les (las) vió á ellos (á ellas)*
Let the man be killed, *mátesele al hombre*
Let them be killed, *máteseles (las) á ellos (á ellas)*

Mátesemeles, let them be killed (for me): this meaning is the same as the preceding, the only difference being the use of a superfluous dative *me*, for me.

There is no doubt but that the Spaniards unconsciously use this *se* as a subject, about equivalent in meaning to the French *on;* it can always be translated in that way and give a correct translation of the Spanish expression; as, *se mató al hombre*, 'one killed the man' = *on tua l'homme.* But it must be remembered that grammatically it is always an object pronoun, as is seen by its position in the imperative.

NOTE. — There is a slight shade of difference in meaning between *se dice*, the reflexive substitute, and *dicen*, the indefinite third person plural substitute: *se dice* meaning 'it is said,' where the speaker is included with others; whereas in *dicen* the speaker is not included. Practically the same difference exists in English between "it is said" and "they say."

IMPERSONAL VERBS

142. Impersonal verbs have already been defined to be verbs that have neither subject nor object, and usually refer to some phenomena of nature. They are conjugated only in

the infinitive, present participle, past participle, and in the third person singular of the other moods and tenses. Impersonal verbs may be either essential or accidental. Essential impersonal verbs are used only as impersonal verbs, and always refer to some phenomena of nature. The principal essential impersonal verbs are:

Alborear, to dawn
Amanecer, to dawn
Anochecer, to grow dark
Deshelar, to thaw
Granizar, to hail
Helar, to freeze
Llover, to rain
Lloviznar, to drizzle
Nevar, to snow
Relampaguear, to lighten
Tronar, to thunder
Ventear, to blow

NOTE. — In figurative language, these verbs may have a subject: *la artilleria truena*, the artillery thunders.

143. Accidental impersonal verbs are ordinary verbs that may sometimes be used impersonally. They may have a neuter subject, *ello*, it, expressed for emphasis, when not used in describing phenomena of nature.

The principal accidental impersonal verbs are:

Acaecer, acontecer, suceder, to happen: (*ello*) *acaece, acontece, sucede*, it happens.
Bastar, to be sufficient: (*ello*) *basta*, it is sufficient.
Constar, to be evident: (*ello*) *consta*, it is evident.
Convenir, to suit: (*ello*) *conviene*, it suits.
Estar, to be: *está nevando*, it is snowing.
Haber, there to be: *hay hombres*, there are men; *¿cuánto hay de aquí?* how far is it from here?
Hacer, to be: *hace un mes*, it is one month (one month ago); *hace sol*, it is sunny.
Importar, to matter, to be important: (*ello*) *importa*, it matters, is important.
Ser, to be: *es verdad, necesario*, it is true, necessary; *son las dos*, it is two o'clock.

Some of these verbs may also be employed in the third person plural, and may agree with a subject: *muchos milagros me sucedieron*, many miracles happened to me.

Under this head also comes the impersonal substitute in permanent reflexive verbs: *me alegro*, I rejoice, or *se me alegra*, I rejoice,—(lit.) it rejoices itself to me.

144. THE IMPERSONAL VERB HABER = THERE TO BE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **haber**, there to be. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo**, there being.
PAST PARTICIPLE: **habido**, there having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
Present		*Present*	
hay	there is *or* there are	**haya**	that there be *or* may be.
Imperfect		*Imperfect (First Form)*	
había	there was *or* there were	**hubiera**	that there should be *or* were
Past Definite		*Imperfect (Second Form)*	
hubo	there was *or* there were	**hubiese**	that there were *or* should be.
Future		*Future*	
habrá	there will be	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **hubiere,** if, when, while, although, etc., there be *or* shall be	
Conditional (Consequent)		*Conditional (Antecedent)*	
habría	there would be	si **hubiera** or **hubiese**, if there should be, *or* were	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

haya	let there be	**no haya**	let there not be

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber habido,** there to have been.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo habido,** there having been.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha habido**	there has *or* have been
Comp. Imp.	**había habido**	there had been
Comp. Past Def.	**hubo habido**	(when) there had been
Comp. Fut.	**habrá habido**	there will have been
Comp. Cond.	**habría habido**	there would have been

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya habido**	that there were *or* may have been
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera habido**	that there should have been *or* had been
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese habido**	that there had been *or* should have been
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere habido**	that there have been *or* shall have been
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese habido**	that there should have been *or* had been

NOTE.—The only variation from the auxiliary **haber** is in the third person singular present indicative—**hay** instead of **ha**. In the compound present indicative, however, **ha** is used. In the personal verb, the imperative—singular and plural **he, hed,** in the meaning of *behold* are still found, with the adverbs **aquí, ahí** and **allí,** and the pronoun objects *me, te, le, la, lo, nos, os, los, las.*

heme aquí, here I am.
helo ahí, there it is.
hednos aquí, here we are.
helos, helas ahí, there they are.

145. THE IMPERSONAL VERB GRANIZAR = TO HAIL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **granizar,** to hail. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **granizando,** hailing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **granizado,** hailed.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
Present		*Present*	
graniza	it hails	**granice**	that it hail *or* may hail
Imperfect		*Imperfect (First Form)*	
granizaba	it was hailing *or* used to hail	**granizara**	that it should hail *or* hailed
Past Definite		*Imperfect (Second Form)*	
granizó	it hailed	**granizase**	that it hailed *or* should hail.
Future		*Future*	
granizará	it will hail	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **granizare,** if, when, while, although, etc., it hail *or* shall hail	
Conditional (Consequent)		*Conditional (Antecedent)*	
granizaría	it would hail	si **granizara** *or* **granizase,** if it should hail *or* hailed	

IMPERATIVE MOOD. AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

granice let it hail **no granice** let it not hail

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber granizado,** to have hailed.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo granizado,** having hailed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha granizado**	it has hailed
Comp. Imp.	**había granizado**	it had hailed
Comp. Past Def.	**hubo granizado**	(when) it had hailed
Comp. Fut.	**habrá granizado**	it shall have hailed
Comp. Cond.	**habría granizado**	it should have hailed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya granizado**	that it have *or* may have hailed
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera granizado**	that it should have *or* had hailed
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese granizado**	that it had *or* should have hailed
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere granizado**	that it have *or* shall have hailed
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese granizado**	that it should have *or* had hailed

146. THE IMPERSONAL VERB LLOVER = TO RAIN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **llover,** to rain. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **lloviendo,** raining.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **llovido,** rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
Present		*Present*	
llueve	it rains	**llueva**	that it rain *or* may rain
Imperfect		*Imperfect (First Form)*	
llovía	it was raining *or* used to rain	**lloviera**	that it should rain *or* rained
Past Definite		*Imperfect (Second Form)*	
llovió	it rained	**lloviese**	that it rained *or* should rain

Future

llovera it will rain

Conditional (Consequent)

llovería it would rain

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **lloviere**, if, when, while, although, etc., it rain *or* shall rain

Conditional (Antecedent)

si **lloviera** or **lloviese**, if it should rain *or* rained.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

ll*ue*va let it rain

no ll*ue*va let it not rain

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber llovido,** to have rained.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo llovido,** having rained.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha llovido**	it has rained
Comp. Imp.	**había llovido**	it had rained
Comp Past Def.	**hubo llovido**	(when) it had rained
Comp. Fut.	**habrá llovido**	it shall have rained
Comp. Cond.	**habría llovido**	it should have rained

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp Pres.	**haya llovido**	that it have *or* may have rained
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera llovido**	that it should have *or* had rained
Comp Imp (2d form)	**hubiese llovido**	that it had *or* should have rained
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere llovido**	that it have *or* shall have rained
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese llovido**	that it should have *or* had rained

147. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **NEVAR** = TO SNOW

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **nevar,** to snow.

PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **nevando,** snowing.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **nevado,** snowed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

n*ie*va it snows

Imperfect

nevaba it was snowing *or* used to snow

Past Definite

nevó it snowed

Future

nevará it will snow

Conditional (Consequent)

nevaría it would snow

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

n*ie*ve that it snow *or* may snow

Imperfect (First Form)

nevara that it should snow *or* snowed

Imperfect (Second Form)

nevase that it snowed *or* should snow

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **nevare,** if, when, while, although, etc., it snow *or* shall snow

Conditional (Antecedent)

si **nevara** or **nevase,** if it should snow *or* snowed

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

n*ie*ve let it snow

no n*ie*ve let it not snow.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber nevado,** to have snowed.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo nevado,** having snowed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha nevado**	it has snowed
Comp. Imp.	**había nevado**	it had snowed
Comp. Past Def.	**hubo nevado**	(when) it had snowed
Comp. Fut.	**habrá nevado**	it shall have snowed
Comp. Cond.	**habría nevado**	it should have snowed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya nevado**	that it have *or* may have snowed
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera nevado**	that it should have *or* had snowed
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese nevado**	that it had *or* should have snowed
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere nevado**	that it have *or* shall have snowed
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese nevado**	that it should have *or* had snowed

148. THE IMPERSONAL VERB RELAMPAGUEAR = TO LIGHTEN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **relampaguear,** to lighten. PRES. PART.: **relampagueando,** lightening.

PAST PARTICIPLE: **relampagueado,** lightened.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

relampaguea it lightens

Imperfect

relampagueaba it was lightening *or* used to lighten

Past Definite

relampagueó it lightened

Future

relampagueará it will lighten

Conditional (Consequent)

relampaguearía it would lighten

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

relampaguee that it lighten *or* may lighten

Imperfect (First Form)

relampagueara that it should lighten *or* lightened

Imperfect (Second Form)

relampaguease that it lightened *or* should lighten

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **relampagueare,** if it lighten *or* shall lighten

Conditional (Antecedent)

si **relampagueara** or **relampaguease,** if it should lighten *or* lightened

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

relampaguee let it lighten **no relampaguee** let it not lighten

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber relampagueado,** to have lightened.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo relampagueado,** having lightened.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha relampagueado**	it has lightened
Comp. Imp.	**había relampagueado**	it had lightened
Comp. Past Def.	**hubo relampagueado**	(when) it had lightened
Comp. Fut.	**habrá relampagueado**	it shall have lightened
Comp. Cond.	**habría relampagueado**	it should have lightened

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya relampagueado**	that it have *or* may have lightened
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera relampagueado**	that it should have *or* had lightened
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese relampagueado**	that it had *or* should have lightened
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere relampagueado**	that it have *or* shall have lightened
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese relampagueado**	that it should have *or* had lightened

149. THE IMPERSONAL VERB **AMANECER**—TO DAWN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **amanecer,** to dawn. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **amaneciendo,** dawning

PAST PARTICIPLE: **amanecido,** dawned.

INDICATIVE MOOD		SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD	
Present		*Present*	
amanece	it dawns	**amanezca**	that it dawn *or* may dawn
Imperfect		*Imperfect (First Form)*	
amanecía	it was dawning *or* used to dawn	**amaneciera**	that it should dawn *or* dawned
Past Definite		*Imperfect (Second Form)*	
amaneció	t dawned	**amaneciese**	that it dawned *or* should dawn
Future		*Future*	
amanecerá	it will dawn	si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc., **amaneciere,** if, when, while, although, etc., it dawn *or* shall dawn.	
Conditional (Consequent)		*Conditional (Antecedent)*	
amanecería	it would dawn	si **amaneciera** or **amaneciese,** if it should dawn *or* dawned	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

amanezca	let it dawn	**no amanezca**	let it not dawn

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber amanecido,** to have dawned.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo amanecido,** having dawned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**ha amanecido**	it has dawned
Comp. Imp.	**había amanecido**	it had dawned
Comp. Past Def.	**hubo amanecido**	(when) it had dawned
Comp. Fut.	**habrá amanecido**	it shall have dawned
Comp. Cond.	**habría amanecido**	it should have dawned

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya amanecido**	that it have *or* may have dawned
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera amanecido**	that it should have *or* had dawned
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese amanecido**	that it had *or* should have dawned
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere amanecido**	that it have *or* shall have dawned
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese amanecido**	that it should have *or* had dawned

NOTE. — **Amanecer,** to dawn, and its companion verb **anochecer,** to grow dusk, may be inflected throughout with a personal meaning. *amanecimos en Nueva York,* it was dawn when we reached New York; *anochecimos en Nueva York,* it was dark when we reached New York.

IRREGULAR VERBS

150. We have seen that by dropping the endings *ar*, *er* or *ir* of the infinitive we obtain the stem of the verb.

We have also seen that in the regular verbs the stem never varies except for orthographic changes.

In irregular verbs the *inflectional endings* are the same (except in a few verbs) as in the regular verbs; but the *stem* varies from that in the infinitive so as to assume sometimes two, sometimes three different forms.

Knowing these two or three different forms of the stem and what the tenses are that are built up on them, we can conjugate the whole verb by adding the usual fixed inflexional endings.

These three stems are: 1st, the stem of the infinitive or *present stem*; 2d, the stem of the past definite, or *past definite stem*; and third, the full infinitive itself, called for convenience the *future stem*.

By comparison of all the irregular verbs it can be demonstrated that upon these three stems the following tenses are built up respectively:

Present Stem	Infinitive Present Participle (usually) Past Participle Present Indicative Imperfect Indicative Present Subjunctive Imperative
Past Definite Stem	Present Participle (occasionally) Past Definite Indicative Imperfect Subjunctives Future Subjunctive Conditional Subjunctive
Future Stem	Future Indicative Conditional Indicative

151. Whenever an irregularity occurs in the future stem it is present *throughout* the future and conditional tenses of the indicative.

152. An irregularity *never* occurs *throughout* the tenses of the present stem; and an irregularity *may* or *may not* occur *throughout* the tenses of the past definite stem.

153. When an irregularity occurs in the present or past definite stems *under certain conditions only* (depending on tonic accent and inflectional ending), this irregularity will be found to exist in the tenses built up on those stems, when those conditions are fulfilled, *and not otherwise.*

154. For convenience, when a stem receives the tonic accent, it will be called a tonic stem; and when a stem does not receive the tonic accent it will be called an atonic stem.

The stem-vowel is the vowel of the stem nearest the ending.

155. The learner will be greatly aided in mastering irregular verbs if he remembers that the present subjunctive always comes from the first person singular present indicative, by changing the ending *o* to *a* or *e*, as, *caber, quepo, quepa; sonar, sueno, suene;* and the other tenses of the subjunctive always come from the third person plural past definite by changing *ron* to *ra, se, re*, as, *poder, pudieron, pudiera, pudiese, pudiere.* There are only a few irregular *futures;* only a few irregular second person singulars of the imperative.

156. Irregular verbs are divided into seven classes:

First Class

This class comprises verbs in *ar* and *er*, and one in *ir*, having the stem-vowels *e* and *o*. Their irregularity consists in the expansion of the stem-vowel *e* into its diphthong *ie*, or of *o* into its diphthong *ue*, when the stem is *tonic.* This irregularity will therefore occur in the present stem only, and there only as follows:

1st, 2d and 3d Person Singular and 3d Person Plural	of	Present Indicative, Present Subjunctive, Imperative;

for in all other cases the stem is atonic.

There are 341 verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

ar, stem-vowel *e*	. . .	156	. . . . (model *pensar*, p. 108).
ar, stem-vowel *o*	. . .	126	. . . . (model *sonar*, p. 114).
er, stem-vowel *e*	. . .	27	. . . . (model *perder*, p. 118).
er, stem-vowel *o*	. . .	31	. . . . (model *mover*, p. 120).
ir, stem-vowel *e*	. . .	1	. . . . (*discernir*, p. 126).

Second Class

157. This class comprises verbs in *ir* only, having the stem-vowels *e* and *o*. Their irregularity consists in the expansion of the stem-vowel *e* into its diphthong *ie*, or of *o* into its diphthong *ue*, when the stem is tonic, exactly as with verbs of the first class. In addition, however, the stem-vowel *e* becomes *i*, or the stem-vowel *o* becomes *u*, when the stem is *atonic* and is followed by *a*, *ie* or *ió*. The latter change takes place as follows:

Present Participle.
First and Second Persons Plural Present Subjunctive.
First Person Plural Imperative.
Third Person Singular and Plural Past Definite.
Imperfect Subjunctives.
Future Subjunctive.

There are fifty verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

ir, stem-vowel *e*	43 . . .	(model *sentir*, p. 128).
ir, stem-vowel *o*	7 . . .	(model *morir*, p. 134).

Third Class

158. This class comprises verbs ending in *ir* only, having the stem-vowel *e*. Their irregularity consists in *e* becoming *i* when the stem is *tonic* or when followed by *a*, *ie*, or *ió*, viz., in

Present Indicative, except First and Second Persons Plural.
Present Subjunctive.
Imperative, except Second Person Plural.
Present Participle.
Past Definite, Third Person Singular and Plural.
Imperfect and Future Subjunctives.

There are 54 verbs in this class (model *servir*, p. 136).

Fourth Class

159. This class comprises verbs in *acer*, *ecer*, *ocer*, *ucir*. Their irregularity consists in inserting a *z* before the *c* when followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in

First Person Singular Present Indicative.
Throughout Present Subjunctive.
Imperative derived from Present Subjunctive.

There are 210 verbs in this class, sub-divided as follows:

acer, ecer, ocer	203 . . .	(model *conocer*, p. 140).
ucir	7 . . .	(model *lucir*, p. 144).

Fifth Class

160. This class comprises verbs in *uir*, both vowels being sounded — that is, it does not include verbs in *guir*, *quir*. Their irregularity consists in inserting *y* before the ending when the stem-vowel *u* gets the tonic accent or is followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in

Present Indicative, except First and Second Persons Plural.
Present Subjunctive.
Imperative derived from Present Subjunctive.

In addition, this class of verbs undergoes the orthographic change of *i* into *y* of the diphthongal endings *ie*, *ió* in the past definite stem. (See *creer*, p. 68.)

There are 38 verbs in this class, subdivided as follows:

uir (not *guir*, *quir*) . . . . 36 . . (model *atribuir*, p. 146).
güir . . . . . 2 . . (model *argüir*, p. 148).

Sixth Class

161. This class consists of fourteen verbs in *ar*, *er* and *ir* and their compounds, with *irregular past definites*. The tonic accent in the first and third persons singular past definite, is on the stem instead of on the ending as in other verbs. These are as follows:

1. **andar**	5. **estar** (see p. 72)	7. **hacer**	11. **saber**
2. **caber**		8. **poder**	12. **tener**
3. **decir**	6. **haber** (see p. 20)	9. **poner**	13. **traer**
4. **traducir***		10. **querer**	14. **venir**

Seventh Class

162. This class consists of ten very irregular verbs in *ar*, *er* and *ir* and their compounds, incapable of classification under any other head. These verbs are as follows:

1. **asir**	3. **dar**	5. **oír**	7. **ser** (see p. 92)	9. **ver**
2. **caer**	4. **ir**	6. **salir**	8. **valer**	10. **yacer**

* And other compounds of *ducir*, which is now obsolete.

Present Stem, e = ie when bare *

163. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **PENSAR** — TO THINK

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE **pensar**, to think. PRESENT PARTICIPLE **pensando**, thinking. PAST PARTICIPLE **pensado**, thought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	p*ie*nso	I think (do think, am thinking)
	p*ie*nsas	thou thinkest
	p*ie*nsa	he thinks
V	**p*ie*nsa**	your honor thinks
	pensamos	we think
	pensáis	ye think
	p*ie*nsan	they think
VV.	**p*ie*nsan**	your honors think

Imperfect

	pensaba	I was thinking
	pensabas	thou wast thinking
	pensaba	he was thinking
V	**pensaba**	your honor was thinking
	pensábamos	we were thinking
	pensabais	ye were thinking
	pensaban	they were thinking
VV.	**pensaban**	your honors were thinking

Past Definite

	pensé	I thought
	pensaste	thou didst think
	pensó	he thought
V	**pensó**	your honor thought
	pensamos	we thought
	pensasteis	ye thought
	pensaron	they thought
VV	**pensaron**	your honors thought

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	p*ie*nse	that I think
	p*ie*nses	that thou think
	p*ie*nse	that he think
V	**p*ie*nse**	that your honor think
	pensemos	that we think
	penséis	that ye think
	p*ie*nsen	that they think
VV.	**p*ie*nsen**	that your honors think

Imperfect (First Form)

	pensara	that I should think
	pensaras	that thou shouldst think
	pensara	that he should think
V.	**pensara**	that your honor should think
	pensáramos	that we should think
	pensarais	that ye should think
	pensaran	that they should think
VV.	**pensaran**	that your honors should think

Imperfect (Second Form)

	pensase	that I thought
	pensases	that thou thought
	pensase	that he thought
V	**pensase**	that your honor thought
	pensásemos	that we thought
	pensaseis	that ye thought
	pensasen	that they thought
VV	**pensasen**	that your honors thought

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

	pensaré	I shall think
	pensarás	thou wilt think
	pensará	he will think
V.	**pensará**	your honor will think
	pensaremos	we shall think
	pensaréis	ye will think
	pensarán	they will think
VV.	**pensarán**	your honors will think

Conditional (Consequent)

	pensaría	I should think
	pensarías	thou wouldst think
	pensaría	he would think
V.	**pensaría**	your honor would think
	pensaríamos	we should think
	pensaríais	ye would think
	pensarían	they would think
VV.	**pensarían**	your honors would think

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	pensare	if, when, while, although, etc.	I think	*or* shall think, etc.
	pensares		thou think	
	pensare		he think	
V.	**pensare**		your honor think	
	pensáremos		we think	
	pensareis		ye think	
	pensaren		they think	
VV.	**pensaren**		your honors think	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**pensara**	or	**pensase**	if	I should think	*or* thought.
	pensaras	or	**pensases**		thou shouldst think	
	pensara	or	**pensase**		he should think	
V.	**pensara**	or V.	**pensase**		your honor should think	
	pensáramos	or	**pensásemos**		we should think	
	pensarais	or	**pensaseis**		ye should think	
	pensaran	or	**pensasen**		they should think	
VV.	**pensaran**	or VV.	**pensasen**		your honors should think	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

p*ie*nsa	think (thou)	**no p*ie*nses**	think (thou) not
pensad	think (ye)	**no penséis**	think (ye) not
p*ie*nse	let me think	**no p*ie*nse**	let me not think
p*ie*nse	let him think	**no p*ie*nse**	let him not think
p*ie*nse V.	think, your honor	**no p*ie*nse** V.	think not, your honor
pensemos	let us think	**no pensemos**	let us not think
p*ie*nsen	let them think	**no p*ie*nsen**	let them not think
p*ie*nsen VV.	think, your honors	**no p*ie*nsen** VV.	think not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber pensado,** to have thought.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo pensado,** having thought

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he pensado,** etc.	I have thought, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había pensado,** etc.	I had thought, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube pensado,** etc.	(when) I had thought, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré pensado,** etc.	I shall have thought, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría pensado,** etc.	I should have thought, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya pensado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have thought, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera pensado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had thought, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese pensado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have thought, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere pensado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have thought, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese pensado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had thought, etc.

The derivatives **compensar, recompensar** are regular.

Conjugate in the same manner as **pensar,** *p.* 108.

abnegar
acertar
acrecentar
adecentar
adestrar
alebrarse
alentar
aliquebrar
apacentar
apernar
apretar
arrendar
asentar
aserrar
asosegar
atentar [1]
aterrar [2]
atestar [3]
atravesar
avalentar
aventar
bregar
calentar
cegar
cerrar
cimentar
comenzar
concertar
confesar
decentar
denegar
dentar
derrenegar
derrengar
desacertar
desaferrar
desalentar
desapretar
desarrendar
desasentar
desasosegar
desatentar
desaterrar
desatravesar
desaventar
desconcertar
desdentar
desempedrar
desencerrar
desenterrar
desferrar
desgobernar
deshelar
desherbar
desherrar
desinvernar
deslendrar
desmelar
desmembrar
desnegar
desnevar
despedrar
despernar
despertar
despezar [4]
desplegar
destentar
desterrar
desventar
dezmar
dispertar
emparentar
empedrar
empellar
empezar
encentar
encerrar
encomendar
encubertar
endentar
enhambrentar
enhestar
enlenzar
enmelar
enmendar
ensangrentar
enterrar
entrepernar
escarmentar
estregar
ferrar
fregar
gobernar
hacendar
helar
herbar
herrar
incensar
infernar
inhestar
invernar
jimenzar *or* simenzar
manifestar
melar
mentar [5]
merendar
negar
nevar
perniquebrar
plegar
quebrar
reapretar
reaventar
recalentar
recentar
recomendar
reencomendar
refregar
regar
regimentar
reherrar
remendar
renegar
repensar
replegar [6]
requebrar
resegar
resembrar
resquebrar
restregar
retemblar
retentar
reventar
salpimentar
sarmentar
segar
sembrar
sementar
sentar
serrar
sobresembrar
sobreventar
sorregar
sosegar
soterrar
subarrendar
temblar
tentar [7]
trasegar
trasfregar
travesar
trapezar
ventar

1 *Atentar* is regular when it means 'to attempt a crime.'

2 *Aterrar* is regular when it means 'to terrify' (from *terror*); when it means 'to fell to the ground' (from *tierra*) it is irregular.

3 *Atestar* is regular when it means 'to testify.'

4 *Despezar* is regular when it means 'to make thinner at the end.'

5 *Comentar*, *dementar*, derivatives from *mentar*, are regular.

6 *Replegar* is regular when it means 'to fold again.'

7 *Contentar*, *detentar*, *intentar*, derivatives from *tentar*, are regular.

Conjugate in the same manner as **sonar**, *p.* 114.

absonar
abuñolar
aclocar
acollar
acordar [1]
acornar
acostar
afollar
aforar [2]
agorar
almorzar
alongar
amoblar
amolar
apercollar
apostar [3]
aprobar
asolar
asoldar
asonar
atronar
avergonzar
azolar
clocar
colar
colgar
comprobar
concordar
consolar
consonar
contar
contracordar
costar
degollar
demostrar
denostar
derrocar
desacollar
desacordar
desaforar
desamoblar
desaprobar
descolgar
descollar
desconsolar
descontar
descordar
descornar
desencordar
desengrosar
desflocar
desmajolar
desolar
desoldar
desollar
desosar [4]
desovar
despoblar
destrocar
desvergonzarse
discordar
disonar
dolar
emporcar
enclocar
encontrar
encorar
encordar
encornar
encovar
engorar
engrosar
enrodar
ensalmorar
ensoñar
entorlar
escolar
esforzar
follar [5]
forzar
holgar
hollar
improbar
malsonar
mancornar
moblar
mostrar
poblar
probar
recolar
recontar
recordar
recostar
reforzar
regoldar
rehollar
remolar
repoblar
reprobar
resollar
resonar
retostar
retronar
revolar
revolcarse
rodar
rogar [6]
sobresolar
solar
soldar
soltar
sollar
sonrodarse
soñar
tostar
trascolar
trascordarse
trasoñar
trastrocar
trasvolar
trocar
tronar
volar
volcar

1 *Acordar* is regular when it means 'to tune' a musical instrument.
2 *Aforar* is regular when it means 'to gauge' or 'appraise.'
3 *Apostar* is regular when it means 'to post' troops, guards, etc.
4 *Desosar* is regular when it means 'not to dare.'
5 *Follar* is regular when it means 'to shape with leaves.'
6 All derivatives from *rogar* are regular.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, e = ie = ye, when tonic *

164. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB ERRAR = TO MISS

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **errar,** to miss. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **errando,** missing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **errado,** missed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	*ye*rro	I miss (do miss, am missing)
	*ye*rras	thou missest
	*ye*rra	he misses
V.	*ye*rra	your honor misses
	erramos	we miss
	erráis	ye miss
	*ye*rran	they miss
VV.	*ye*rran	your honors miss

Imperfect

	erraba	I was missing	or used to miss.
	errabas	thou wast missing	
	erraba	he was missing	
V.	erraba	your honor was missing	
	errábamos	we were missing	
	errabais	ye were missing	
	erraban	they were missing	
VV.	erraban	your honors were missing	

Past Definite

	erré	I missed
	erraste	thou didst miss
	erró	he missed
V.	erró	your honor missed
	erramos	we missed
	errasteis	ye missed
	erraron	they missed
VV.	erraron	your honors missed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	*ye*rre	that I miss	or may miss, etc.
	*ye*rres	that thou miss	
	*ye*rre	that he miss	
V.	*ye*rre	that your honor miss	
	erremos	that we miss	
	erréis	that ye miss	
	*ye*rren	that they miss	
VV.	*ye*rren	that your honors miss	

Imperfect (First Form)

	errara	that I should miss	or missed.
	erraras	that thou shouldst miss	
	errara	that he should miss	
V.	errara	that your honor should miss	
	erráramos	that we should miss	
	errarais	that ye should miss	
	erraran	that they should miss	
VV.	erraran	that your honors should miss	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	errase	that I missed	or should miss, etc.
	errases	that thou missed	
	errase	that he missed	
V.	errase	that your honor missed	
	errásemos	that we missed	
	erraseis	that ye missed	
	errasen	that they missed	
VV.	errasen	that your honors missed	

* As by Spanish orthography the diphthong **ie** should not begin a syllable, initial **ie** in this verb changes to **ye.** Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

	erraré	I shall miss
	errarás	thou wilt miss
	errará	he will miss
V.	**errará**	your honor will miss
	erraremos	we shall miss
	erraréis	ye will miss
	errarán	they will miss
VV.	**errarán**	your honors will miss

Conditional (Consequent)

	erraría	I should miss
	errarías	thou wouldst miss
	erraría	he would miss
V.	**erraría**	your honor would miss
	erraríamos	we should miss
	erraríais	ye would miss
	errarían	they would miss
VV.	**errarían**	your honors would miss

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	errare	I miss
	errares	thou miss
	errare	he miss
V.	**errare**	your honor miss
	erráremos	we miss
	errareis	ye miss
	erraren	they miss
VV.	**erraren**	your honors miss

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall miss, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	errara	or	**errase**		I should miss
	erraras	or	**errases**		thou shouldst miss
	errara	or	**errase**		he should miss
V.	**errara**	or	V. **errase**		your honor should miss
	erráramos	or	**errásemos**		we should miss
	errarais	or	**erraseis**		ye should miss
	erraran	or	**errasen**		they should miss
VV.	**erraran**	or	VV. **errasen**		your honors should miss

if — *or* missed.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

***ye*rra**	miss (thou)	**no *ye*rres**	miss (thou) not
errad	miss (ye)	**no erréis**	miss (ye) not
***ye*rre**	let me miss	**no *ye*rre**	let me not miss
***ye*rre**	let him miss	**no *ye*rre**	let him not miss
***ye*rre** V.	miss, your honor	**no *ye*rre** V.	miss not, your honor
erremos	let us miss	**no erremos**	let us not miss
***ye*rren**	let them miss	**no *ye*rren**	let them not miss
***ye*rren** VV.	miss, your honors	**no *ye*rren** VV.	miss not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber errado,** to have missed.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo errado,** having missed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he errado,** etc.	I have missed, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había errado,** etc.	I had missed, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube errado,** etc.	(when) I had missed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré errado,** etc.	I shall have missed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría errado,** etc.	I should have missed, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya errado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have missed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera errado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had missed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese errado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have missed, etc.
Comp. Fut	**hubiere errado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have missed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese errado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had missed, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, o = ue, when tonic *

165. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SONAR — TO SOUND

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sonar**, to sound. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sonando**, sounding. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sonado**, sounded.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	s*ue*no	I sound (do sound, am sounding)
	s*ue*nas	thou soundest
	s*ue*na	he sounds
V.	**s*ue*na**	your honor sounds
	sonamos	we sound
	sonáis	ye sound
	s*ue*nan	they sound
VV.	**s*ue*nan**	your honors sound

Imperfect

	sonaba	I was sounding
	sonabas	thou wast sounding
	sonaba	he was sounding
V.	**sonaba**	your honor was sounding
	sonábamos	we were sounding
	sonabais	ye were sounding
	sonaban	they were sounding
VV.	**sonaban**	your honors were sounding

or used to sound.

Past Definite

	soné	I sounded
	sonaste	thou didst sound
	sonó	he sounded
V.	**sonó**	your honor sounded
	sonamos	we sounded
	sonasteis	ye sounded
	sonaron	they sounded
VV.	**sonaron**	your honors sounded

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	s*ue*ne	that I sound
	s*ue*nes	that thou sound
	s*ue*ne	that he sound
V.	**s*ue*ne**	that your honor sound
	sonemos	that we sound
	sonéis	that ye sound
	s*ue*nen	that they sound
VV.	**s*ue*nen**	that your honor sound

or may sound, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	sonara	that I should sound
	sonaras	that thou shouldst sound
	sonara	that he should sound
V.	**sonara**	that your honor should sound
	sonáramos	that we should sound
	sonarais	that ye should sound
	sonaran	that they should sound
VV.	**sonaran**	that your honors should sound

or sounded, etc.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	sonase	that I sounded
	sonases	that thou sounded
	sonase	that he sounded
V.	**sonase**	that your honor sounded
	sonásemos	that we sounded
	sonaseis	that ye sounded
	sonasen	that they sounded
VV.	**sonasen**	that your honors sounded

or should sound, etc.

* Where the changes occur, the letters are printed in italics.

Future

sonaré	I shall sound
sonarás	thou wilt sound
sonará	he will sound
V. **sonará**	your honor will sound
sonaremos	we shall sound
sonareis	ye will sound
sonarán	they will sound
VV. **sonarán**	your honors will sound

Conditional (Consequent)

sonaría	I should sound
sonarías	thou wouldst sound
sonaría	he would sound
V. **sonaría**	your honor would sound
sonaríamos	we should sound
sonaríais	ye would sound
sonarían	they would sound
VV. **sonarían**	your honors would sound

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

sonare	I sound
sonares	thou sound
sonare	he sound
V. **sonare**	your honor sound
sonáremos	we sound
sonareis	ye sound
sonaren	they sound
VV. **sonaren**	your honors sound

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall sound, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

sonara	or	**sonase**	I should sound
sonaras	or	**sonases**	thou shouldst sound
sonara	or	**sonase**	he should sound
V. **sonara**	or	V. **sonase**	your honor should sound
sonaramos	or	**sonásemos**	we should sound
sonarais	or	**sonaseis**	ye should sound
sonaran	or	**sonasen**	they should sound
VV. **sonaran**	or	VV. **sonasen**	your honors should sound

if

or sounded, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

***sue*na**	sound (thou)	**no *sue*nes**	sound (thou) not
sonad	sound (ye)	**no sonéis**	sound (ye) not
***sue*ne**	let me sound	**no *sue*ne**	let me not sound
***sue*ne**	let him sound	**no *sue*ne**	let him not sound
***sue*ne** V.	sound, your honor	**no *sue*ne** V.	sound not, your honor
sonemos	let us sound	**no sonemos**	let us not sound
***sue*nen**	let them sound	**no *sue*nen**	let them not sound
***sue*nen** VV.	sound, your honors	**no *sue*nen** VV.	sound not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sonado,** to have sounded.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sonado,** having sounded.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sonado,** etc.	I have sounded, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sonado,** etc.	I had sounded, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube sonado,** etc.	(when) I had sounded, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sonado,** etc.	I shall have sounded, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sonado.** etc.	I should have sounded, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sonado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have sounded, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sonado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had sounded, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese sonado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have sounded, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sonado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have sounded, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sonado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had sounded, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, First Conjugation

Present Stem, **u** = **ue**, when tonic *

166. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **JUGAR** = TO PLAY, GAMBLE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **jugar**, to play. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **jugando**, playing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **jugado**, played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	j*ue*go	I play (do play, am playing)
	j*ue*gas	thou playest
	j*ue*ga	he plays
V.	**j*ue*ga**	your honor plays
	jugamos	we play
	jugáis	ye play
	j*ue*gan	they play
VV.	**j*ue*gan**	your honors play

Imperfect

	jugaba	I was playing	or used to play.
	jugabas	thou wast playing	
	jugaba	he was playing	
V.	**jugaba**	your honor was playing	
	jugábamos	we were playing	
	jugabais	ye were playing	
	jugaban	they were playing	
VV.	**jugaban**	your honors were playing	

Past Definite

	jugué	I played
	jugaste	thou didst play
	jugó	he played
V.	**jugó**	your honor played
	jugamos	we played
	jugasteis	ye played
	jugaron	they played
VV.	**jugaron**	your honors played

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	j*ue*gue	that I play	or may play, etc.
	j*ue*gues	that thou play	
	j*ue*gue	that he play	
V.	**j*ue*gue**	that your honor play	
	juguemos	that we play	
	uguéis	that ye play	
	j*ue*gen	that they play	
VV.	**j*ue*gen**	that your honors play	

Imperfect (First Form)

	jugara	that I should play	or played.
	jugaras	that thou shouldst play	
	jugara	that he should play	
V.	**jugara**	that your honor should play	
	jugáramos	that we should play	
	jugarais	that ye should play	
	jugaran	that they should play	
VV.	**jugaran**	that your honors should play	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	jugase	that I played	or should play, etc.
	jugases	that thou played	
	jugase	that he played	
V.	**jugase**	that your honor played	
	jugásemos	that we played	
	jugaseis	that ye played	
	jugasen	that they played	
VV.	**jugasen**	that your honors played	

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics. Although the stem vowel is **u**, this verb belongs to the first class, its stem being originally **o** (Latin *jocari*).

Future

	jugaré	I shall play
	jugarás	thou wilt play
	jugará	he will play
V.	**jugará**	your honor will play
	jugaremos	we shall play
	jugaréis	ye will play
	jugarán	they will play
VV.	**jugarán**	your honors will play

Conditional (Consequent)

	jugaría	I should play
	jugarías	thou wouldst play
	jugaría	he would play
V.	**jugaría**	your honor would play
	jugaríamos	we should play
	jugaríais	ye would play
	jugarían	they would play
VV.	**jugarían**	your honors would play

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	jugare			I play
	jugares			thou play
	jugare			he play
V.	**jugare**			your honor play
	jugáremos			we play
	jugareis			ye play
	jugaren			they play
VV.	**jugaren**			your honors play

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall play, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	jugara	or	**jugase**		I should play
	jugaras	or	**jugases**		thou shouldst play
	jugara	or	**jugase**		he should play
V.	**jugara**	or	V. **jugase**		your honor should play
	jugáramos	or	**jugásemos**		we should play
	jugarais	or	**jugaseis**		ye should play
	jugaran	or	**jugasen**		they should play
VV.	**jugaran**	or	VV. **jugasen**		your honors should play

if — *or* played.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

j*ue*ga	play (thou)	**no j*ue*gues**	play (thou) not
jugad	play (ye)	**no juguéis**	play (ye) not
j*ue*gue	let me play	**no j*ue*gue**	let me not play
j*ue*gue	let him play	**no j*ue*gue**	let him not play
j*ue*gue V.	play, your honor	**no j*ue*gue** V.	play not, your honor
juguemos	let us play	**no juguemos**	let us not play
j*ue*guen	let them play	**no j*ue*guen**	let them not play
j*ue*gen VV.	play, your honors	**no j*ue*guen** VV.	play not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber jugado,** to have played.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo jugado,** having played.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he jugado,** etc.	I have played, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había jugado,** etc.	I had played, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube jugado,** etc.	(when) I had played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré jugado,** etc.	I shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría jugado,** etc.	I should have played, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya jugado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have played, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera jugado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had played, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese jugado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have played, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere jugado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have played, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese jugado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had played, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **e = ie**, when tonic *

167. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **PERDER** = TO LOSE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **perder,** to lose. PRESENT PARTICIPLE. **perdiendo,** losing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **perdido,** lost.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	p*ie*rdo	I lose (do lose, am losing)
	p*ie*rdes	thou losest
	p*ie*rde	he loses
V.	**p*ie*rde**	your honor loses
	perdemos	we lose
	perdéis	ye lose
	p*ie*rden	they lose
VV.	**p*ie*rden**	your honors lose

Imperfect

	perdía	I was losing
	perdías	thou wast losing
	perdía	he was losing
V.	**perdía**	your honor was losing
	perdíamos	we were losing
	perdíais	ye were losing
	perdían	they were losing
VV.	**perdían**	your honors were losing

or used to lose.

Past Definite

	perdí	I lost
	perdiste	thou lost
	perdió	he lost
V.	**perdió**	your honor lost
	perdimos	we lost
	perdisteis	ye lost
	perdieron	they lost
VV.	**perdieron**	your honors lost

Future

	perderé	I shall lose
	perderás	thou wilt lose
	perderá	he will lose
V.	**perderá**	your honor will lose
	perderemos	we shall lose
	perderéis	ye will lose
	perderán	they will lose
VV.	**perderán**	your honors will lose

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	p*ie*rda	that I lose
	p*ie*rdas	that thou lose
	p*ie*rda	that he lose
V.	**p*ie*rda**	that your honor lose
	perdamos	that we lose
	perdáis	that ye lose
	p*ie*rdan	that they lose
VV.	**p*ie*rdan**	that your honors lose

or may lose, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	perdiera	that I should lose
	perdieras	that thou shouldst lose
	perdiera	that he should lose
V.	**perdiera**	that your honor should lose
	perdiéramos	that we should lose
	perdierais	that ye should lose
	perdieran	that they should lose
VV.	**perdieran**	that your honors should lose

or lost.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	perdiese	that I lost
	perdieses	that thou lost
	perdiese	that he lost
V.	**perdiese**	that your honor lost
	perdiésemos	that we lost
	perdieseis	that ye lost
	perdiesen	that they lost
VV.	**perdiesen**	that your honors lost

or should lose, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	perdiere	
	perdieres	
	perdiere	
V.	**perdiere**	
	perdiéremos	
	perdiereis	
	perdieren	
VV.	**perdieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I lose	
thou lose	
he lose	
your honor lose	
we lose	
ye lose	
they lose	
your honors lose	

or shall lose, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

	perdería	I should lose
	perderías	thou wouldst lose
	perdería	he would lose
V.	**perdería**	your honor would lose
	perderíamos	we should lose
	perderíais	ye would lose
	perderían	they would lose
VV.	**perderían**	your honors would lose

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**perdiera**	or	**perdiese**	if	I should lose
		perdieras	or	**perdieses**		thou shouldst lose
		perdiera	or	**perdiese**		he should lose
	V.	**perdiera**	or V.	**perdiese**		your honor should lose
		perdiéramos	or	**perdiésemos**		we should lose
		perdierais	or	**perdieseis**		ye should lose
		perdieran	or	**perdiesen**		they should lose
	VV.	**perdieran**	or VV.	**perdiesen**		your honors should lose

or lost.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

pierde	lose (thou)	**no pierdas**	lose (thou) not
perded	lose (ye)	**no perdáis**	lose (ye) not
pierda	let me lose	**no pierda**	let me not lose
pierda	let him lose	**no pierda**	let him not lose
pierda V.	lose, your honor	**no pierda** V.	lose not, your honor
perdamos	let us lose	**no perdamos**	let us not lose
pierdan	let them lose	**no pierdan**	let them not lose
pierdan VV.	lose, your honors	**no pierdan** VV.	lose not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber perdido,** to have lost.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo perdido,** having lost.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he perdido**, etc.	I have lost, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había perdido,** etc.	I had lost, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube perdido,** etc.	(when) I had lost, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré perdido,** etc.	I shall have lost, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría perdido,** etc.	I should have lost, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya perdido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have lost, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera perdido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had lost, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese perdido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have lost, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere perdido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have lost, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese perdido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had lost, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

ascender	**defender**	**distender**	**reverdecer**	**subtender**
atender	**desatender**	**encender**	**reverter**	**tender** *
cerner	**descender**	**entender**	**sobrentender**	**trascender**
condescender	**desentenderse**	**extender**	**sobreverterse**	**trasverter**
contenter	**discerner**	**heder**	**subentender**	**verter**
		hender		

* **pretender** is regular.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, o = ue, when tonic *

168. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB MOVER = TO MOVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **mover,** to move. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **moviendo,** moving. PAST PARTICIPLE: **movido,** moved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	m*ue*vo	I move (do move, am moving)
	m*ue*ves	thou movest
	m*ue*ve	he moves
V.	**m*ue*ve**	your honor moves
	movemos	we move
	movéis	ye move
	m*ue*ven	they move
VV.	**m*ue*ven**	your honors move

Imperfect

	movía	I was moving
	movías	thou wast moving
	movía	he was moving
V.	**movía**	your honor was moving
	movíamos	we were moving
	movíais	ye were moving
	movían	they were moving
VV.	**movían**	your honors were moving

or used to move.

Past Definite

	moví	I moved
	moviste	thou didst move
	movió	he moved
V.	**movió**	your honor moved
	movimos	we moved
	movisteis	ye moved
	movieron	they moved
VV.	**movieron**	your honors moved

Future

	moveré	I shall move
	moverás	thou wilt move
	moverá	he will move
V.	**moverá**	your honor will move
	moveremos	we shall move
	moveréis	ye will move
	moverán	they will move
VV.	**moverán**	your honors will move

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	m*ue*va	that I move
	m*ue*vas	that thou move
	m*ue*va	that he move
V.	**m*ue*va**	that your honor move
	movamos	that we move
	mováis	that ye move
	m*ue*van	that they move
VV.	**m*ue*van**	that your honors move

or may move etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	moviera	that I should move
	movieras	that thou shouldst move
	moviera	that he should move
V.	**moviera**	that your honor should move
	moviéramos	that we should move
	movierais	that ye should move
	movieran	that they should move
VV.	**movieran**	that your honors should move

or moved.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	moviese	that I moved
	movieses	that thou moved
	moviese	that he moved
V.	**moviese**	that your honor moved
	moviésemos	that we moved
	movieseis	that ye moved
	moviesen	that they moved
VV.	**moviesen**	that your honors moved

or should move etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	moviere	
	movieres	
	moviere	
V.	**moviere**	
	moviéremos	
	moviereis	
	movieren	
VV.	**movieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I move	
thou move	
he move	
your honor move	
we move	
ye move	
they move	
your honors move	

or shall move etc.

*These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

movería	I should move
moverías	thou wouldst move
movería	he would move
V. **movería**	your honor would move
moveríamos	we should move
moveríais	ye would move
moverían	they would move
VV. **moverían**	your honors would move

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**moviera**	or	**moviese**	if	I should move
	movieras	or	**movieses**		thou shouldst move
	moviera	or	**moviese**		he should move
	V. **moviera**	or	V. **moviese**		your honor should move
	moviéramos	or	**moviésemos**		we should move
	movierais	or	**movieseis**		ye should move
	movieran	or	**moviesen**		they should move
	VV. **movieran**	or	VV. **moviesen**		your honors should move

or moved. etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

m*ue*ve	move (thou)	**no m*ue*vas**	move (thou) not
moved	move (ye)	**no mováis**	move (ye) not
m*ue*va	let me move	**no m*ue*va**	let me not move
m*ue*va	let him move	**no m*ue*va**	let him not move
m*ue*va V.	move, your honor	**no m*ue*va** V.	move not, your honor
movamos	let us move	**no movamos**	let us not move
m*ue*van	let them move	**no m*ue*van**	let them not move
m*ue*van VV.	move, your honors	**no m*ue*van** VV.	move not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber movido,** to have moved.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo movido**, having moved.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he movido,** etc.	I have moved, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había movido,** etc.	I had moved, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube movido,** etc.	(when) I had moved, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré movido,** etc.	I shall have moved, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría movido,** etc.	I should have moved, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya movido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have moved, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera movido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had moved, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese movido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have moved, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere movido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have moved, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese movido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had moved, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

absolver.	**desenvolver.**	**envolver.**	**remoler.**	**solver.**
amover.	**destorcer.**	**llover** (impersonal)	**remorder.**	**somover.**
condolerse.	**desvolver**	**moler.**	**remover.**	**torcer.**
conmover.	**devolver.**	**morder.**	**resolver.**	**volver.**
contorcerse.	**disolver.**	**promover.**	**retorcer.**	
demoler.	**doler.**	**redoler.**	**revolver.**	

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, o = ue = hue, when tonic *

169. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **OLER** = TO SMELL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **oler,** to smell. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **oliendo,** smelling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **olido,** smelled.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	***hue*lo**	I smell (do smell, am smelling)
	***hue*les**	thou smellest
	***hue*le**	he smells
V.	***hue*le**	your honor smells
	olemos	we smell
	oléis	ye smell
	***hue*len**	they smell
VV.	***hue*len**	your honors smell

Imperfect

	olía	I was smelling
	olías	thou wast smelling
	olía	he was smelling
V.	**olía**	your honor was smelling
	olíamos	we were smelling
	olíais	ye were smelling
	olían	they were smelling
VV.	**olían**	your honors were smelling

or used to smell.

Past Definite

	olí	I smelled
	oliste	thou didst smell
	olió	he smelled
V.	**olió**	your honor smelled
	olimos	we smelled
	olisteis	ye smelled
	olieron	they smelled
VV.	**olieron**	your honors smelled

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	***hue*la**	that I smell
	***hue*las**	that thou smell
	***hue*la**	that he smell
V.	***hue*la**	that your honor smell
	olamos	that we smell
	oláis	that ye smell
	***hue*lan**	that they smell
VV.	***hue*lan**	that your honors smell

or may smell, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	oliera	that I should smell
	olieras	that thou shouldst smell
	oliera	that he should smell
V.	**oliera**	that your honor should smell
	oliéramos	that we should smell
	olierais	that ye should smell
	olieran	that they should smell
VV.	**olieran**	that your honors should smell

or smelled.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	oliese	that I smelled
	olieses	that thou smelled
	oliese	that he smelled
V.	**oliese**	that your honor smelled
	oliésemos	that we smelled
	olieseis	that ye smelled
	oliesen	that they smelled
VV.	**oliesen**	that your honors smelled

or should smell, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Future

	oleré	I shall smell
	olerás	thou wilt smell
	olerá	he will smell
V.	**olerá**	your honor will smell
	oleremos	we shall smell
	oleréis	ye will smell
	olerán	they will smell
VV.	**olerán**	your honors will smell

Conditional (Consequent)

	olería	I should smell
	olerías	thou wouldst smell
	olería	he would smell
V.	**olería**	your honor would smell
	oleríamos	we should smell
	oleríais	ye would smell
	olerían	they would smell
VV.	**olerían**	your honors would smell

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	oliere	
	olieres	
	oliere	
V.	**oliere**	
	oliéremos	
	oliereis	
	olieren	
VV.	**olieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I smell	
thou smell	
he smell	
your honor smell	
we smell	
ye smell	
they smell	
your honors smell	

or shall smell, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	oliera	or		**oliese**
	olieras	or		**olieses**
	oliera	or		**oliese**
V.	**oliera**	or	V.	**oliese**
	oliéramos	or		**oliésemos**
	olierais	or		**olieseis**
	olieran	or		**oliesen**
VV.	**olieran**	or	VV.	**oliesen**

if

I should smell
thou shouldst smell
he should smell
your honor should smell
we should smell
ye should smell
they should smell
your honors should smell

or smelled.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

***hue*le**	smell (thou)	**no *hue*las**	smell (thou) not
oled	smell (ye)	**no oláis**	smell (ye) not
***hue*la**	let me smell	**no *hue*la**	let me not smell
***hue*la**	let him smell	**no *hue*la**	let him not smell
***hue*la** V.	smell, your honor	**no *hue*la** V.	smell not, your honor
olamos	let us smell	**no olamos**	let us not smell
***hue*lan**	let them smell	**no *hue*lan**	let them not smell
***hue*lan** VV.	smell, your honors	**no *hue*lan** VV.	smell not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber olido,** to have smelled.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo olido,** having smelled.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he olido,** etc.	I have smelled, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había olido,** etc.	I had smelled, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube olido,** etc.	(when) I had smelled, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré olido,** etc.	I shall have smelled, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría olido,** etc.	I should have smelled, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya olido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have smelled, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera olido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had smelled, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese olido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have smelled, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere olido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have smelled, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese olido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had smelled, etc.

In like manner **desosar,** to bone (**hueso**), and **desovar,** to spawn (**huevo**) introduce an **h** before diphthong **ue**; but **desosar,** meaning 'not to dare,' is regular.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **o = ue**, when tonic *

170. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **COCER** = TO BOIL, BAKE (MEAT, VEGETABLES, BREAD)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **cocer**, to boil. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cociendo**, boiling. PAST PARTICIPLE. **cocido**, boiled.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	c*ue*zo	I boil (do boil, am boiling)
	c*ue*ces	thou boilest
	c*ue*ce	he boils
V.	**c*ue*ce**	your honor boils
	cocemos	we boil
	cocéis	ye boil
	c*ue*cen	they boil
VV.	**c*ue*cen**	your honors boil

Imperfect

	cocía	I was boiling
	cocías	thou wast boiling
	cocía	he was boiling
V.	**cocía**	your honor was boiling
	cocíamos	we were boiling
	cocíais	ye were boiling
	cocían	they were boiling
VV.	**cocían**	your honors were boiling

or used to boil.

Past Definite

	cocí	I boiled
	cociste	thou didst boil
	coció	he boiled
V.	**coció**	your honor boiled
	cocimos	we boiled
	cocisteis	ye boiled
	cocieron	they boiled
VV.	**cocieron**	your honors boiled

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	c*ue*za	that I boil
	c*ue*zas	that thou boil
	c*ue*za	that he boil
V.	**c*ue*za**	that your honor boil
	cozamos	that we boil
	cozáis	that ye boil
	c*ue*zan	that they boil
VV.	**c*ue*zan**	that your honors boil

or may boil, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	cociera	that I should boil
	cocieras	that thou shouldst boil
	cociera	that he should boil
V.	**cociera**	that your honor should boil
	cociéramos	that we should boil
	cocierais	that ye should boil
	cocieran	that they should boil
VV.	**cocieran**	that your honors should boil

or boiled.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	cociese	that I boiled
	cocieses	that thou boiled
	cociese	that he boiled
V.	**cociese**	that your honor boiled
	cociésemos	that we boiled
	cocieseis	that ye boiled
	cociesen	that they boiled
VV.	**cociesen**	that your honors boiled

or should boil, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics. Speaking of water, **hervir**, to boil, is the correct verb to use.

Future

coceré	I shall boil
cocerás	thou wilt boil
cocerá	he will boil
V. **cocerá**	your honor will boil
coceremos	we shall boil
coceréis	ye will boil
cocerán	they will boil
VV. **cocerán**	your honors will boil

Conditional (Consequent)

cocería	I should boil
cocerías	thou wouldst boil
cocería	he would boil
V. **cocería**	your honor would boil
coceríamos	we should boil
coceríais	ye would boil
cocerían	they would boil
VV. **cocerían**	your honors would boil

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

cociere	if, when, while, although, etc.	I boil	*or* shall boil, etc.
cocieres		thou boil	
cociere		he boil	
V. **cociere**		your honor boil	
cociéremos		we boil	
cociereis		ye boil	
cocieren		they boil	
VV. **cocieren**		your honors boil	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

cociera	or	**cociese**	if	I should boil	*or* boiled.
cocieras	or	**cocieses**		thou shouldst boil	
cociera	or	**cociese**		he should boil	
V. **cociera**	or	V. **cociese**		your honor should boil	
cociéramos	or	**cociésemos**		we should boil	
cocierais	or	**cocieseis**		ye should boil	
cocieran	or	**cociesen**		they should boil	
VV. **cocieran**	or	VV. **cociesen**		your honors should boil	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

c*ue*ce	boil (thou)	**no c*ue*zas**	boil (thou) not
coced	boil (ye)	**no cozáis**	boil (ye) not
c*ue*za	let me boil	**no c*ue*za**	let me not boil
c*ue*za	let him boil	**no c*ue*za**	let him not boil
c*ue*za V.	boil, your honor	**no c*ue*za** V.	boil not, your honor
cozamos	let us boil	**no cozamos**	let us not boil
c*ue*zan	let them boil	**no c*ue*zan**	let them not boil
c*ue*zan VV.	boil, your honors	**no c*ue*zan** VV.	boil not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber cocido,** to have boiled.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cocido,** having boiled

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he cocido,** etc.	I have boiled, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había cocido,** etc.	I had boiled, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube cocido,** etc.	(when) I had boiled, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré cocido,** etc.	I shall have boiled, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría cocido,** etc.	I should have boiled, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya cocido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have boiled, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera cocido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had boiled, etc.
Comp Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese cocido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have boiled, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere cocido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have boiled, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese cocido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had boiled, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

escocer, recocer.

IRREGULAR VERBS — First Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = ie, when tonic *

171. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB DISCERNIR = TO DISCERN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **discernir**, to discern. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **discerniendo**, discerning. PAST PARTICIPLE: **discernido**, discerned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	disc*ie*rno	I discern (do discern, am discerning)
	disc*ie*rnes	thou discernest
	disc*ie*rne	he discerns
V.	**disc*ie*rne**	your honor discerns
	discernimos	we discern
	discernís	ye discern
	disc*ie*rnen	they discern
VV.	**disc*ie*rnen**	your honors discern

Imperfect

	discernía	I was discerning
	discernías	thou wast discerning
	discernía	he was discerning
V.	**discernía**	your honor was discerning
	discerníamos	we were discerning
	discerníais	ye were discerning
	discernían	they were discerning
VV.	**discernían**	your honors were discerning

or used to discern.

Past Definite

	discerní	I discerned
	discerniste	thou didst discern
	discernió	he discerned
V.	**discernió**	your honor discerned
	discernimos	we discerned
	discernisteis	ye discerned
	discernieron	they discerned
VV.	**discernieron**	your honors discerned

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	disc*ie*rna	that I discern
	disc*ie*rnas	that thou discern
	disc*ie*rna	that he discern
V.	**disc*ie*rna**	that your honor discern
	discernamos	that we discern
	discernáis	that ye discern
	disc*ie*rnan	that they discern
VV.	**disc*ie*rnan**	that your honors discern

or may discern, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	discerniera	that I should discern
	discernieras	that thou shouldst discern
	discerniera	that he should discern
V.	**discerniera**	that your honor should discern
	discerniéramos	that we should discern
	discernierais	that ye should discern
	discernieran	that they should discern
VV.	**discernieran**	that your honors should discern

or discerned.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	discerniese	that I discerned
	discernieses	that thou discerned
	discerniese	that he discerned
V.	**discerniese**	that your honor discerned
	discerniésemos	that we discerned
	discernieseis	that ye discerned
	discerniesen	that they discerned
VV.	**discerniesen**	that your honors discerned

or should discern, etc.

*These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Future

	discerniré	I shall discern
	discernirás	thou wilt discern
	discernirá	he will discern
V.	**discernirá**	your honor will discern
	discerniremos	we shall discern
	discerniréis	ye will discern
	discernirán	they will discern
VV.	**discernirán**	your honors will discern

Conditional (Consequent)

	discerniría	I should discern
	discernirías	thou wouldst discern
	discerniría	he would discern
V.	**discerniría**	your honor would discern
	discerniríamos	we should discern
	discerniríais	ye would discern
	discernirían	they would discern
VV.	**discernirían**	your honors would discern

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	discerniere	I discern
	discernieres	thou discern
	discerniere	he discern
V.	**discerniere**	your honor discern
	discerniéremos	we discern
	discerniereis	ye discern
	discernieren	they discern
VV.	**discernieren**	your honors discern

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall discern, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	discerniera	or	**discerniese**	
	discernieras	or	**discernieses**	
	discerniera	or	**discerniese**	
V.	**discerniera**	or	V. **discerniese**	
	discerniéramos	or	**discerniésemos**	
	discernierais	or	**discernieseis**	
	discernieran	or	**discerniesen**	
VV.	**discernieran**	or	VV. **discerniesen**	

if

I should discern
thou shouldst discern
he should discern
your honor should discern
we should discern
ye should discern
they should discern
your honors should discern

or discerned.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

disc*ie*rne	discern (thou)	**no disc*ie*rnas**	discern (thou) not
discernid	discern (ye)	**no discernáis**	discern (ye) not
disc*ie*rna	let me discern	**no disc*ie*rna**	let me not discern
disc*ie*rna	let him, her discern	**no disc*ie*rna**	let him, her not discern
disc*ie*rna V.	discern, your honor	**no disc*ie*rna** V.	discern not, your honor
discernamos	let us discern	**no discernamos**	let us not discern
disc*ie*rnan	let them discern	**no disc*ie*rnan**	let them not discern
disc*ie*rnan VV.	discern, your honors	**no disc*ie*rnan** VV.	discern not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber discernido,** to have discerned.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo discernido,** having discerned.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he discernido,** etc.	I have discerned, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había discernido,** etc.	I had discerned, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube discernido,** etc.	(when) I had discerned, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré discernido,** etc.	I shall have discerned, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría discernido,** etc.	I should have discerned, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya discernido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have discerned, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera discernido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had discerned, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese discernido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have discerned, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere discernido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have discerned, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese discernido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had discerned, etc.

This verb and the defective verb **concernir** belong to the first class; originally they were **discerner, concerner,** and they retain the irregularities of their primitive verb, **cerner.**

Present stem, e — ie when tonic — Past and present definite stems, e — i when atonic and when followed by a, le, ió *

172. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SENTIR = TO FEEL

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **sentir,** to feel. PRES. PARTICIPLE: **sintiendo,** feeling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sentido,** felt.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	siento	I feel (do feel, am feeling)
	sientes	thou feelest
	siente	he feels
V.	siente	your honor feels
	sentimos	we feel
	sentís	ye feel
	sienten	they feel
VV.	sienten	your honors feel

Imperfect (used as past: I was feeling, etc.)

	sentía	I was feeling
	sentías	thou wast feeling
	sentía	he was feeling
V.	sentía	your honor was feeling
	sentíamos	we were feeling
	sentíais	ye were feeling
	sentían	they were feeling
VV.	sentían	your honors were feeling

Past Definite

	sentí	I felt
	sentiste	thou didst feel
	sintió	he felt
V.	sintió	your honor felt
	sentimos	we felt
	sentisteis	ye felt
	sintieron	they felt
VV.	sintieron	your honors felt

Future (I shall feel, etc.; thou will feel, etc.; he will feel, etc.; your honor will feel, etc.; we shall feel, etc.; ye will feel, etc.; they will feel, etc.; your honors will feel, etc.)

	sentiré	I shall feel
	sentirás	thou will feel
	sentirá	he will feel
V.	sentirá	your honor will feel
	sentiremos	we shall feel
	sentiréis	ye will feel
	sentirán	they will feel
VV.	sentirán	your honors will feel

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	sienta	that I feel
	sientas	that thou feel
	sienta	that he feel
V.	sienta	that your honor feel
	sintamos	that we feel
	sintáis	that ye feel
	sientan	that they feel
VV.	sientan	that your honors feel

Imperfect (First Form) (if, when, while, as through, etc.; if, when, while, as through, etc.)

	sintiera	that I should feel
	sintieras	that thou shouldst feel
	sintiera	that he should feel
V.	sintiera	that your honor should feel
	sintiéramos	that we should feel
	sintierais	that ye should feel
	sintieran	that they should feel
VV.	sintieran	that your honors should feel

Imperfect (Second Form) (if, when, while, as through, etc.; if, when, while, as through, etc.)

	sintiese	that I feel
	sintieses	that thou felt
	sintiese	that he felt
V.	sintiese	that your honor felt
	sintiésemos	that we felt
	sintiéseis	that ye felt
	sintiesen	that they felt
VV.	sintiesen	that your honors felt

Future (if, when, while, as through, etc.; if, when, while, as through, etc.)

	sintiere	I feel
	sintieres	thou feel
	sintiere	he feel
V.	sintiere	your honor feel
	sintiéremos	we feel
	sintiereis	ye feel
	sintieren	they feel
VV.	sintieren	your honors feel

* [illegible]

Conditional (Consequent)

	sentiría	I should feel
	sentirías	thou wouldst feel
	sentiría	he would feel
V.	**sentiría**	your honor would feel
	sentiríamos	we should feel
	sentiríais	ye should feel
	sentirían	they should feel
VV.	**sentirían**	your honors would feel

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**sintiera**	or	**sintiese**	if	I should feel
		sintieras	or	**sintieses**		thou shouldst feel
		sintiera	or	**sintiese**		he should feel
	V.	**sintiera**	or	V. **sintiese**		your honor should feel
		sintiéramos	or	**sintiésemos**		we should feel
		sintierais	or	**sintieseis**		ye should feel
		sintieran	or	**sintiesen**		they should feel
	VV.	**sintieran**	or	VV. **sintiesen**		your honors should feel

or felt, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

siente	feel (thou)	**no sientas**	feel (thou) not
sentid	feel (ye)	**no sintáis**	feel (ye) not
sienta	let me feel	**no sienta**	let me not feel
sienta	let him feel	**no sienta**	let him not feel
sienta V.	feel, your honor	**no sienta V.**	feel not, your honor
sintamos	let us feel	**no sintamos**	let us not feel
sientan	let them feel	**no sientan**	let them not feel
sientan VV	feel, your honors	**no sientan VV.**	feel not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sentido,** to have felt.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sentido,** having felt.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sentido,** etc.	I have felt, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sentido,** etc.	I had felt, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube sentido,** etc.	I had felt, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sentido,** etc.	I shall have felt, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sentido,** etc.	I should have felt, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sentido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have felt, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sentido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had felt, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese sentido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have felt, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sentido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have felt, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sentido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had felt, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

adherir.	**deferir.**	**entregerir.**	**pervertir.**	**requerir.**
advertir.	**desadvertir.**	**herir.**	**preferir.**	**resentirse.**
arrepentirse.	**desconsentir.**	**hervir.**	**presentir.**	**sobrevestir.**
asentir.	**desmentir.**	**inferir.**	**proferir.**	**subvertir.**
conferir.	**diferir.**	**ingerir.**	**referir.**	**sugerir.**
consentir.	**digerir.**	**invertir.**	**reherir.**	**trasferir.**
controvertir.	**disentir.**	**malherir.**	**rehervir.**	**zaherir.**
convertir.	**divertir.**	**mentir.**	**rementir.**	

IRREGULAR VERBS — Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = ie = ye when tonic. Present and past def. stems, e = i when atonic and followed by **a, ie, ió** *

173. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ERGUIR** = TO THROW BACK HAUGHTILY (THE HEAD)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE. **erguir,** to throw back haughtily. PRES. PARTICIPLE: ***i*rguiendo,** throwing back haughtily. PAST PART.: **erguido,** thrown back haughtily.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	***ye*rgo**	I throw back haughtily (do throw back, am throwing back)
	***ye*rgues**	thou throwest back haughtily
	***ye*rgue**	he throws back haughtily
V.	***ye*rgue**	your honor throws back haughtily
	erguimos	we throw back haughtily
	erguís	ye throw back haughtily
	***ye*rguen**	they throw back haughtily
VV.	***ye*rguen**	your honors throw back haughtily

Imperfect

	erguía	I was throwing back haughtily
	erguías	thou wast throwing back haughtily
	erguía	he was throwing back haughtily
V.	**erguía**	your honor was throwing back haughtily
	erguíamos	we were throwing back haughtily
	erguíais	ye were throwing back haughtily
	erguían	they were throwing back haughtily
VV.	**erguían**	your honors were throwing back haughtily

or used to throw back haughtily.

Past Definite

	erguí	I threw back haughtily
	erguiste	thou threwest back haughtily
	***i*rguió**	he threw back haughtily
V.	***i*rguió**	your honor threw back haughtily
	erguimos	we threw back haughtily
	erguisteis	ye threw back haughtily
	***i*rguieron**	they threw back haughtily
VV.	***i*rguieron**	your honors threw back haughtily

Future

	erguiré	I shall throw back haughtily
	erguirás	thou wilt throw back haughtily
	erguirá	he will throw back haughtily
V.	**erguirá**	your honor will throw back haughtily
	erguiremos	we shall throw back haughtily
	erguiréis	ye will throw back haughtily
	erguirán	they will throw back haughtily
VV.	**erguirán**	your honors will throw back haughtily

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	***ye*rga**	that I throw back haughtily
	***ye*rgas**	that thou throw back haughtily
	***ye*rga**	that he throw back haughtily
V.	***ye*rga**	that your honor throw back haughtily
	***i*rgamos**	that we throw back haughtily
	***i*rgáis**	that ye throw back haughtily
	***ye*rgan**	that they throw back haughtily
VV.	***ye*rgan**	that your honors throw back haughtily

or may throw back haughtily, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	***i*rguiera**	that I should throw back haughtily
	***i*rguieras**	that thou shouldst throw back haughtily
	***i*rguiera**	that he should throw back haughtily
V.	***i*rguiera**	that your honor should throw back haughtily
	***i*rguiéramos**	that we should throw back haughtily
	***i*rguierais**	that ye should throw back haughtily
	***i*rguieran**	that they should throw back haughtily
VV.	***i*rguieran**	that your honors should throw back haughtily

or threw back haughtily.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	***i*rguiese**	that I threw back haughtily
	***i*rguieses**	that thou threw back haughtily
	***i*rguiese**	that he threw back haughtily
V.	***i*rguiese**	that your honor threw back haughtily
	***i*rguiésemos**	that we threw back haughtily
	***i*rguieseis**	that ye threw back haughtily
	***i*rguiesen**	that they threw back haughtily
VV.	***i*rguiesen**	that your honors threw back haughtily

or should throw back haughtily, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc. / if, when, while, although, etc.

	***i*rguiere**	I throw back haughtily
	***i*rguieres**	thou throw back haughtily
	***i*rguiere**	he throw back haughtily
V.	***i*rguiere**	your honor throw back haughtily
	***i*rguiéremos**	we throw back haughtily
	***i*rguiereis**	ye throw back haughtily
	***i*rguieren**	they throw back haughtily
VV.	***i*rguieren**	your honors throw back haughtily

or shall throw back haughtily, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

erguiría	I should throw back haughtily
erguirías	thou wouldst throw back haughtily
erguiría	he would throw back haughtily
V. **erguiría**	your honor would throw back haughtily
erguiríamos	we should throw back haughtily
erguiríais	ye would throw back haughtily
erguirían	they would throw back haughtily
VV. **erguirían**	your honors would throw back haughtily

Conditional (Antecedent)

si { **irguiera** or **irguiese**; **irguieras** or **irguieses**; **irguiera** or **irguiese**; V. **irguiera** or V. **irguiese**; **irguiéramos** or **irguiésemos**; **irguierais** or **irguieseis**; **irguieran** or **irguiesen**; VV. **irguieran** or VV. **irguiesen** } if { I should throw back haughtily; thou shouldst throw back haughtily; he should throw back haughtily; your honor should throw back haughtily; we should throw back haughtily; ye should throw back haughtily; they should throw back haughtily; your honors should throw back haughtily } *or* threw back haughtily.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

***ye*rgue**	throw (thou) back haughtily	**no *ye*rgas**	throw (thou) not back haughtily
erguid	throw (ye) back haughtily	**no *i*rgáis**	throw (ye) not back haughtily
***ye*rga**	let me throw back haughtily	**no *ye*rga**	let me not throw back haughtily
***ye*rga**	let him throw back haughtily	**no *ye*rga**	let him not throw back haughtily
***ye*rga** V.	throw back haughtily, your honor	**no *ye*rga** V.	throw not back haughtily, your honor
***i*rgamos**	let us throw back haughtily	**no *i*rgamos**	let us not throw back haughtily
***ye*rgan**	let them throw back haughtily	**no *ye*rgan**	let them not throw back haughtily
***ye*rgan** VV.	throw back haughtily, your honors	**no *ye*rgan** VV.	throw not back haughtily, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber erguido,** to have thrown back haughtily.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo erguido,** having thrown back haughtily.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he erguido,** etc.	I have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había erguido,** etc.	I had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube erguido,** etc.	(when) I had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré erguido,** etc.	I shall have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría erguido,** etc.	I should have thrown back haughtily, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya erguido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera erguido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese erguido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere erguido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have thrown back haughtily, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese erguido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had thrown back haughtily, etc.

In the verb **erguir,** in the first, second and third persons singular and third person plural of present indicative, subjunctive and imperative, the vowel **i** may take the place of the diphthong **ie,** written **ye:** thus,

***i*rgo,** ***i*rgues,** ***i*rgue,** V. ***i*rgue,** VV. ***i*rguen**
***i*rga,** ***i*rgas,** ***i*rga,** V. ***i*rga,** VV. ***i*rgan**

***i*rgue**	**no *i*rgas**
***i*rga**	**no *i*rga**
***i*rga**	**no *i*rga**
***i*rga** V.	**no *i*rga** V.
***i*rgan**	**no *i*rgan**
***i*rgan** VV.	**no *i*rgan** VV.

erguir belongs either to the second or third class of irregular verbs: ***ye*rgo,** second class, ***i*rgo,** third class.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **i** = **ie** when tonic *

174. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ADQUIRIR** = TO ACQUIRE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **adquirir**, to acquire. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **adquiriendo**, acquiring. PAST PARTICIPLE: **adquirido**, acquired.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	adqu*ie*ro	I acquire (do acquire, am acquiring)
	adqu*ie*res	thou acquirest
	adqu*ie*re	he acquires
V.	**adqu*ie*re**	your honor acquires
	adquirimos	we acquire
	adquirís	ye acquire
	adqu*ie*ren	they acquire
VV.	**adqu*ie*ren**	your honors acquire

Imperfect

	adquiría	I was aquiring
	adquirías	thou wast acquiring
	adquiría	he was acquiring
V.	**adquiría**	your honor was acquiring
	adquiríamos	we were aquiring
	adquiríais	ye were acquiring
	adquirían	they were acquiring
VV.	**adquirían**	your honors were acquiring

or used to acquire.

Past Definite

	adquirí	I acquired
	adquiriste	thou acquiredst
	adquirió	he acquired
V.	**adquirió**	your honor acquired
	adquirimos	we acquired
	adquiristeis	ye acquired
	adquirieron	they acquired
VV.	**adquirieron**	your honors acquired

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	adqu*ie*ra	that I acquire
	adqu*ie*ras	that thou acquire
	adqu*ie*ra	that he acquire
V.	**adqu*ie*ra**	that your honor acquire
	adquiramos	that we acquire
	adquiráis	that ye acquire
	adqu*ie*ran	that they acquire
VV.	**adqu*ie*ran**	that your honors acquire

or may acquire, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	adquiriera	that I should acquire
	adquirieras	that thou shouldst acquire
	adquiriera	that he should acquire
V.	**adquiriera**	that your honor should acquire
	adquiriéramos	that we should acquire
	adquirierais	that ye should acquire
	adquirieran	that they should acquire
VV.	**adquirieran**	that your honors should acquire

or acquired.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	adquiriese	that I acquired
	adquirieses	that thou acquired
	adquiriese	that he acquired
V.	**adquiriese**	that your honor acquired
	adquiriésemos	that we acquired
	adquirieseis	that ye acquired
	adquiriesen	that they acquired
VV.	**adquiriesen**	that your honors acquired

or should acquire, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Future

	adquiriré	I shall acquire
	adquirirás	thou wilt acquire
	adquirirá	he will acquire
V.	**adquirirá**	your honor will acquire
	adquiriremos	we shall acquire
	adquiriréis	ye will acquire
	adquirirán	they will acquire
VV.	**adquirirán**	your honors will acquire

Conditional (Consequent)

	adquiriría	I should acquire
	adquirirías	thou wouldst acquire
	adquiriría	he would acquire
V.	**adquiriría**	your honor would acquire
	adquiriríamos	we should acquire
	adquiriríais	ye would acquire
	adquirirían	they would acquire
VV.	**adquirirían**	your honors would acquire

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	adquiriere	I acquire
	adquirieres	thou acquire
	adquiriere	he acquire
V.	**adquiriere**	your honor acquire
	adquiriéremos	we acquire
	adquiriereis	ye acquire
	adquirieren	they acquire
VV.	**adquirieren**	your honors acquire

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall acquire, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	adquiriera	or	**adquiriese**		I should acquire
	adquirieras	or	**adquirieses**		thou shouldst acquire
	adquiriera	or	**adquiriese**		he should acquire
V.	**adquiriera**	or V.	**adquiriese**		your honor should acquire
	adquiriéramos	or	**adquiriésemos**	if	we should acquire
	adquirierais	or	**adquiriesels**		ye should acquire
	adquirieran	or	**adquiriesen**		they should acquire
VV.	**adquirieran**	or VV.	**adquiriesen**		your honors should acquire

or acquired.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

adqu*ie*re	acquire (thou)	**no adqu*ie*ras**	acquire (thou) not
adquerid	acquire (ye)	**no adquiráis**	acquire (ye) not
adqu*ie*ra	let me acquire	**no adqu*ie*raj**	let me not acquire
adqu*ie*ra	let him acquire	**no adqu*ie*ra**	let him not acquire
adqu*ie*ra V.	acquire, your honor	**no adqu*ie*ra** V.	acquire not, your honor
adquiramos	let us acquire	**no adquiramos**	let us not acquire
adqu*ie*ran	let them acquire	**no adqu*ie*ran**	let them not acquire
adqu*ie*ran VV.	acquire, your honors	**no adqu*ie*ran** VV.	acquire not, your honors

Adquirir and **inquirir,** being derived from a primitive **quer**, still have the diphthong **ie** in the present stem when tonic.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber adquirido,** to have acquired.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo adquirido,** having acquired.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he adquirido,** etc.	I have acquired, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había adquirido,** etc.	I had acquired, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube adquirido,** etc.	(when) I had acquired, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré adquirido,** etc.	I shall have acquired, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría adquirido,** etc.	I should have acquired, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya adquirido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have acquired, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera adquirido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had acquired, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese adquirido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have acquired, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere adquirido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have acquired, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese adquirido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had acquired, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Second Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, o = **ue** when tonic. Present and past definite stems, o = **u** when atonic and followed by **a, ie, ió***

175. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **MORIR** = TO DIE

SIMPLE TENSES.

INFINITIVE: **morir**, to die. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **m*u*riendo**, dying. PAST PARTICIPLE: **m*uerto***, died.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	m*u*ero	I die (do die, am dying)
	m*u*eres	thou diest
	m*u*ere	he dies
V.	**m*u*ere**	your honor dies
	morimos	we die
	morís	ye die
	m*u*eren	they die
VV.	**m*u*eren**	your honors die

Imperfect

	moría	I was dying
	morías	thou wast dying
	moría	he was dying
V.	**moría**	your honor was dying
	moríamos	we were dying
	moríais	ye were dying
	morían	they were dying
VV.	**morían**	your honors were dying

or used to die.

Past Definite

	morí	I died
	moriste	thou didst die
	m*u*rió	he died
V.	**m*u*rió**	your honor died
	morimos	we died
	moristeis	ye died
	m*u*rieron	they died
VV.	**m*u*rieron**	your honors died

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	m*u*era	that I die
	m*u*eras	that thou die
	m*u*era	that he die
V.	**m*u*era**	that your honor die
	m*u*ramos	that we die
	m*u*ráis	that ye die
	m*u*eran	that they die
VV.	**m*u*eran**	that your honor die

or may die, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	m*u*riera	that I should die
	m*u*rieras	that thou shouldst die
	m*u*riera	that he should die
V.	**m*u*riera**	that your honor should die
	m*u*riéramos	that we should die
	m*u*rierais	that ye should die
	m*u*rieran	that they should die
VV.	**m*u*rieran**	that your honors should die

or died.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	m*u*riese	that I died
	m*u*rieses	that thou died
	m*u*riese	that he died
V.	**m*u*riese**	that your honor died
	m*u*riésemos	that we died
	m*u*rieseis	that ye died
	m*u*riesen	that they died
VV.	**m*u*riesen**	that your honors died

or should die, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

NOTE. — **Morir** has the irregular past participle, **muerto.**

Future

	moriré	I shall die
	morirás	thou wilt die
	morirá	he will die
V.	**morirá**	your honor will die
	moriremos	we shall die
	moriréis	ye will die
	morirán	they will die
VV.	**morirán**	your honors will die

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	m*u*riere	I die
	m*u*rieres	thou die
	m*u*riere	he die
V.	**m*u*riere**	your honor die
	m*u*riéremos	we die
	m*u*riereis	ye die
	m*u*rieren	they die
VV.	**m*u*rieren**	your honors die

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall die, etc.

Conditional (*Consequent*)

	moriría	I should die
	moririas	thou wouldst die
	moriría	he would die
V.	**moriría**	your honor would die
	moririamos	we should die
	moririais	ye would die
	morirían	they would die
VV.	**morirían**	your honors would die

Conditional (*Antecedent*)

si

	m*u*riera	or	**m*u*riese**	
	m*u*rieras	or	**m*u*rieses**	
	m*u*riera	or	**m*u*riese**	
V.	**m*u*riera**	or	V. **m*u*riese**	
	m*u*riéramos	or	**m*u*riésemos**	
	m*u*rierais	or	**m*u*rieseis**	
	m*u*rieran	or	**m*u*riesen**	
VV.	**m*u*rieran**	or	VV. **m*u*riesen**	

if

I should die	
thou shouldst die	
he should die	
your honor should die	
we should die	
ye should die	
they should die	
your honors should die	

or died.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

m*u*ere	die (thou)	**no m*u*eras**	die (thou) not
morid	die (ye)	**no m*u*ráis**	die (ye) not
m*u*era	let me die	**no m*u*era**	let me not die
m*u*era	let him die	**no m*u*era**	let him not die
m*u*era V.	die, your honor	**no m*u*era** V.	die not, your honor
m*u*ramos	let us die	**no m*u*ramos**	let us not die
m*u*eran	let them die	**no m*u*eran**	let them not die
m*u*eran VV.	die, your honors	**no m*u*eran** VV.	die not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber m*u*erto**, to have died.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo m*u*erto**, having died.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Comp. Pres.	**he m*u*erto**, etc.	I have died, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había m*u*erto**, etc.	(when) I had died, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube m*u*erto**, etc.	I had died etc.
Comp. Fut	**habré m*u*erto**, etc.	I shall have died, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría m*u*erto**, etc.	I should have died, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya m*u*erto**, etc.	that I have *or* may have died, etc
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera m*u*erto**, etc.	that I should have *or* had died, etc
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese m*u*erto**, etc.	that I had *or* should have died, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere m*u*erto**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have died, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese m*u*erto**, etc.	that I should have *or* had died, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

adormir **dormir** **entremorir** **premorir**

Podrir or **pudrir, pudriendo, podrido,** to decay.
Repodrir or **repudrir, repudriendo, repodrido.**

The stem vowel **o** formerly changed to **u** when it received the tonic accent, or when followed by **a, ie, ió**; it is now **u** throughout, except as indicated.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Third Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, e = i when tonic, *or* when followed by **a**. Past Definite Stem, e = i when atonic *and* followed by **ie, ió** *

176. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB SERVIR = TO SERVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **servir,** to serve. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sirviendo,** serving. PAST PARTICIPLE: **servido,** served.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	sirvo	I serve (do serve, am serving)
	sirves	thou servest
	sirve	he serves
V.	**sirve**	your honor serves
	servimos	we serve
	servís	ye serve
	sirven	they serve
VV.	**sirven**	your honors serve

Imperfect

	servía	I was serving	*or* used to serve.
	servías	thou wast serving	
	servía	he was serving	
V.	**servía**	your honor was serving	
	servíamos	we were serving	
	servíais	ye were serving	
	servían	they were serving	
VV.	**servían**	your honors were serving	

Past Definite

	serví	I served
	serviste	thou didst serve
	sirvió	he served
V.	**sirvió**	your honor served
	servimos	we served
	servisteis	ye served
	sirvieron	they served
VV.	**sirvieron**	your honors served

Future

	serviré	I shall serve
	servirás	thou wilt serve
	servirá	he will serve
V.	**servirá**	your honor will serve
	serviremos	we shall serve
	serviréis	ye will serve
	servirán	they will serve
VV.	**servirán**	your honors will serve

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	sirva	that I serve	*or* may serve etc.
	sirvas	that thou serve	
	sirva	that he serve	
V.	**sirva**	that your honor serve	
	sirvamos	that we serve	
	sirváis	that ye serve	
	sirvan	that they serve	
VV.	**sirvan**	that your honors serve	

Imperfect (First Form)

	sirviera	that I should serve	*or* served.
	sirvieras	that thou shouldst serve	
	sirviera	that he should serve	
V.	**sirviera**	that your honor should serve	
	sirviéramos	that we should serve	
	sirvierais	that ye should serve	
	sirvieran	that they should serve	
VV.	**sirvieran**	that your honors should serve	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	sirviese	that I served	*or* should serve, etc.
	sirvieses	that thou served	
	sirviese	that he served	
V.	**sirviese**	that your honor served	
	sirviésemos	that we served	
	sirvieseis	that ye served	
	sirviesen	that they served	
VV.	**sirviesen**	that your honors served	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc,		**sirviere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I serve	*or* shall serve, etc.
		sirvieres		thou serve	
		sirviere		he serve	
	V.	**sirviere**		your honor serve	
		sirviéremos		we serve	
		sirviereis		ye serve	
		sirvieren		they serve	
	VV.	**sirvieren**		your honors serve	

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italic.

Conditional (Consequent)

	serviría	I should serve
	servirías	thou wouldst serve
	serviría	he would serve
V.	**serviría**	your honor would serve
	serviríamos	we should serve
	serviríais	ye would serve
	servirían	they would serve
VV.	**servirían**	your honors would serve

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**sirviera**	or	**sirviese**	if	I should serve
		sirvieras	or	**sirvieses**		thou shouldst serve
		sirviera	or	**sirviese**		he should serve
	V.	**sirviera**	or	V. **sirviese**		your honor should serve
		sirviéramos	or	**sirviésemos**		we should serve
		sirvierais	or	**sirvieseis**		ye should serve
		sirvieran	or	**sirviesen**		they should serve
	VV.	**sirvieran**	or	VV. **sirviesen**		your honors should serve

or served.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sirve	serve (thou)	**no sirvas**	serve (thou) not
servid	serve (ye)	**no sirváis**	serve (ye) not
sirva	let me serve	**no sirva**	let me not serve
sirva	let him serve	**no sirva**	let him not serve
sirva V.	serve, your honor	**no sirva** V.	serve not, your honor
sirvamos	let us serve	**no sirvamos**	let us not serve
sirvan	let them serve	**no sirvan**	let them not serve
sirvan VV.	serve, your honors	**no sirvan** VV.	serve not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber servido,** to have served.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo servido,** having served.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he servido,** etc.	I have served, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había servido,** etc.	I had served, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube servido,** etc.	(when) I had served, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré servido,** etc.	I shall have served, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría servido,** etc.	I should have served, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya servido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have served, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera servido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had served, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese servido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have served, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere servido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have served, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese servido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had served, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

ceñir.	**derretir.**	**embestir.**	**inseguir.**	**reelegir.**	**revestir.**
colegir.	**desceñir.**	**envestir.**	**investir.**	**regir.**	**seguir.**
comedirse.	**descomedirse.**	**estreñir.**	**medir.**	**rehenchir.**	**subseguir.**
competir.	**deservir.**	**expedir.**	**pedir.**	**rendir.**	**teñir.**
concebir.	**desmedirse.**	**gemir.**	**perseguir.**	**reñir.**	**vestir.**
conseguir.	**despedir.**	**henchir.**	**proseguir.**	**repedir.**	
constreñir.	**desteñir.**	**heñir.**	**receñir.**	**repetir.**	
corregir.	**elegir.**	**impedir.**	**recolegir.**	**reteñir.**	

IRREGULAR VERBS — Third Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, e = i when tonic *or* followed by a. Past Definite Stem, e = i when atonic and followed by ie, ió; the i of diphthong is dropped *

177. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **REÍR** = TO LAUGH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **reír,** to laugh. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **r*ie*ndo,** laughing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **reído,** laughed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	r*í*o	I laugh (do laugh, am laughing)
	r*í*es	thou laughest
	r*í*e	he laughs
V.	**r*í*e**	your honor laughs
	reímos	we laugh
	reís	ye laugh
	r*í*en	they laugh
VV.	**r*í*en**	your honors laugh

Imperfect

	reía	I was laughing
	reías	thou wast laughing
	reía	he was laughing
V.	**reía**	your honor was laughing
	reíamos	we were laughing
	reíais	ye were laughing
	reían	they were laughing
VV.	**reían**	your honors were laughing

or used to laugh.

Past Definite

	reí	I laughed
	reíste	thou didst laugh
	r*ió*	he laughed
V.	**r*ió***	your honor laughed
	reímos	we laughed
	reísteis	ye laughed
	r*ie*ron	they laughed
VV.	**r*ie*ron**	your honors laughed

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	r*í*a	that I laugh
	r*í*as	that thou laugh
	r*í*a	that he laugh
V.	**r*í*a**	that your honor laugh
	r*í*amos	that we laugh
	r*í*ais	that ye laugh
	r*í*an	that they laugh
VV.	**r*í*an**	that your honors laugh

or may laugh, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	r*ie*ra	that I should laugh
	r*ie*ras	that thou shouldst laugh
	r*ie*ra	that he should laugh
V.	**r*ie*ra**	that your honor should laugh
	r*ié*ramos	that we should laugh
	r*ie*rais	that ye should laugh
	r*ie*ran	that they should laugh
VV.	**r*ie*ran**	that your honors should laugh

or laughed.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	r*ie*se	that I laughed
	r*ie*ses	that thou laughed
	r*ie*se	that he laughed
V.	**r*ie*se**	that your honor laughed
	r*ié*semos	that we laughed
	r*ie*seis	that ye laughed
	r*ie*sen	that they laughed
VV.	**r*ie*sen**	that your honors laughed

or should laugh, etc.

* Where these changes occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

reiré	I shall laugh
reirás	thou wilt laugh
reirá	he will laugh
V. **reirá**	your honor will laugh
reiremos	we shall laugh
reireis	ye will laugh
reirán	they will laugh
VV. **reirán**	your honors will laugh

Conditional (Consequent)

reiría	I should laugh
reirías	thou wouldst laugh
reiría	he would laugh
V. **reiría**	your honor would laugh
reiríamos	we should laugh
reiríais	ye would laugh
reirían	they would laugh
VV. **reirían**	your honors would laugh

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.:

ríere	
ríeres	
ríere	
V. **ríere**	
riéremos	
ríereis	
ríeren	
VV. **ríeren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.:

I laugh	
thou laugh	
he laugh	
your honor laugh	
we laugh	
ye laugh	
they laugh	
your honors laugh	

or shall laugh, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si:

riera	or	**ríese**
rieras	or	**ríeses**
riera	or	**ríese**
V. **riera**	or V.	**ríese**
riéramos	or	**riésemos**
rierais	or	**ríeseis**
rieran	or	**ríesen**
VV. **rieran**	or VV.	**ríesen**

if:

I should laugh
thou shouldst laugh
he should laugh
your honor should laugh
we should laugh
ye should laugh
they should laugh
your honor should laugh

or laughed, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ríe	laugh (thou)
reíd	laugh (ye)
ría	let me laugh
ría	let him laugh
ría V.	laugh, your honor
ríamos	let us laugh
rían	let them laugh
rían VV.	laugh, your honors

no rías	laugh (thou) not
no ríais	laugh (ye) not
no ría	let me not laugh
no ría	let him not laugh
no ría V.	laugh not, your honor
no ríamos	let us not laugh
no rían	let them not laugh
no rían VV.	laugh not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP. INFINITIVE: **haber reído**, to have laughed.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo reído**, having laughed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he reído**, etc.	I have laughed, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había reído**, etc.	I had laughed, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube reído**, etc.	(when) I had laughed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré reído**, etc.	I shall have laughed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría reído**, etc.	I should have laughed, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya reído**, etc.	that I have *or* may have laughed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera reído**, etc.	that I should have *or* had laughed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese reído**, etc.	that I had *or* should have laughed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere reído**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have laughed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese reído**, etc.	that I should have *or* had laughed, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desleír. **engreír.** **freír.** **refreír.** **sofreír.** **sonreír.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fourth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, insert **z** before **c** when followed by a termination commencing with **a** or **o***

178. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **CONOCER** = TO KNOW (PERSONS)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **conocer**, to know. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **conociendo**, knowing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **conocido**, known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	conozco	I know (do know, am knowing)
	conoces	thou knowest
	conoce	he knows
V.	**conoce**	your honor knows
	conocemos	we know
	conocéis	ye know
	conocen	they know
VV.	**conocen**	your honors know

Imperfect

	conocía	I was knowing
	conocías	thou wast knowing
	conocía	he was knowing
V.	**conocía**	your honor was knowing
	conocíamos	we were knowing
	conocíais	ye were knowing
	conocían	they were knowing
VV.	**conocían**	your honors were knowing

or used to know.

Past Definite

	conocí	I knew
	conociste	thou didst know
	conoció	he knew
V.	**conoció**	your honor knew
	conocimos	we knew
	conocisteis	ye knew
	conocieron	they knew
VV.	**conocieron**	your honors knew

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	conozca	that I know
	conozcas	that thou know
	conozca	that he know
V.	**conozca**	that your honor know
	conozcamos	that we know
	conozcáis	that ye know
	conozcan	that they know
VV.	**conozcan**	that your honors know

or may know, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	conociera	that I should know
	conocieras	that thou shouldst know
	conociera	that he should know
V.	**conociera**	that your honor should know
	conociéramos	that we should know
	conocierais	that ye should know
	conocieran	that they should know
VV.	**conocieran**	that your honors should know

or knew.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	conociese	that I knew
	conocieses	that thou knew
	conociese	that he knew
V.	**conociese**	that your honor knew
	conociésemos	that we knew
	conocieseis	that ye knew
	conociesen	that they knew
VV.	**conociesen**	that your honors knew

or should know, etc.

* These changes in the verb are printed in italics.

Future

	conoceré	I shall know
	conocerás	thou wilt know
	conocerá	he will know
V.	**conocerá**	your honor will know
	conoceremos	we shall know
	conoceréis	ye will know
	conocerán	they will know
VV.	**conocerán**	your honors will know

Conditional (Consequent)

	conocería	I should know
	conocerías	thou wouldst know
	conocería	he would know
V.	**conocería**	your honor would know
	conoceríamos	we should know
	conoceríais	ye would know
	conocerían	they would know
VV.	**conocerían**	your honors would know

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	conociere	I know
	conocieres	thou know
	conociere	he know
V.	**conociere**	your honor know
	conociéremos	we know
	conociereis	ye know
	conocieren	they know
VV.	**conocieren**	your honors know

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall know, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	conociera	or	**conociese**	
	conocieras	or	**conocieses**	
	conociera	or	**conociese**	
V.	**conociera**	or	V. **conociese**	
	conociéramos	or	**conociésemos**	
	conocierais	or	**conocieseis**	
	conocieran	or	**conociesen**	
V.V	**conocieran**	or	VV. **conociesen**	

if

I should know	
thou shouldst know	
he should know	
your honor should know	
we should know	
ye should know	
they should know	
your honors should know	

or knew, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

conoce	know (thou)	**no conozcas**	know (thou) not
conoced	know (ye)	**no conozcáis**	know (ye) not
conozca	let me know	**no conozca**	let me not know
conozca	let him know	**no conozca**	let him not know
conozca V.	know, your honor	**no conozca** V.	know not, your honor
conozcamos	let us know	**no conozcamos**	let us not know
conozcan	let them know	**no conozcan**	let them not know
conozcan VV.	know, your honors	**no conozcan** VV.	know not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber conocido,** to have known.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo conocido,** having known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he conocido,** etc.	I have known, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había conocido,** etc.	I had known, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube conocido,** etc.	(when) I had known, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré conocido,** etc.	I shall have known, etc.
Comp Cond.	**habría conocido,** etc.	I should have known, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya conocido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have known, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera conocido,** etc.	that I should have, *or* had known, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese conocido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have known, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere conocido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have known, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese conocido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had known, etc.

The following verbs are exceptions to this class:

- **mecer**, **empecer** — regular, euphonic change, e. g., **mezo, meces, mece,** V. **mece, mecemos, mecéis, mecen,** VV. **mecen, meza, mezas, meza,** V. **meza, mezamos, mezáis, mezan,** VV. **mezan.**
- **cocer, escocer, recocer** (see **cocer**).
- **hacer** and its compounds (see **hacer**).
- **decir** and its compounds (see **decir**).
- **yacer** (see **yacer**).

Conjugate in the same manner as **conocer**, *p.* 140:

abastecer
aborrecer
acaecer
acontecer
acrecer
adolecer
adormecer
agradecer
amanecer
amollecer
amorecer
amortecerse
anochecer
aparecer
apetecer
avanecerse
blanquecer
canecer
carecer
clarecer
compadecer
comparecer
complacer
convalecer
crecer
decrecer
defenecer
denegrecer
desabastecer
desadormecer
desagradecer
desaparecer
desbastecer
desbravecer
descaecer
desconocer
descrecer
desembebecerse
desembellecer
desembravecer
desempobrecer
desencarecer
desencrudecer
desencruelecer
desenfurecerse
desenmohecer
desenmudecer
desensoberbecer
desentorpecer
desentristecer
desentumecer
desfallecer
desfavorecer
desflaquecerse
desflorecer
desfortalecer
desguarnecer
deshombrecerse
deshumedecer
desmerecer
desobedecer
desparecer
desperecer
desplacer
desvanecer
desverdecer
displacer
embarbecer
embastecer
embebecer
embellecer
embermejecer
emblandecer
emblanquecer
embobecer
embosquecer
embravecer
embrutecer
empequeñecer
emplastecer
emplumecer
empobrecer
empodrecer
empoltronecerse
enaltecer
enardecer
encabellecerse
encalvecer
encallecer
encandecer
encanecer
encarecer
encarnecer
encloquecer
encorecer
encrudecer
encruelecer
endentecer
endurecer
enfierecerse
enflaquecer
enfranquecer
enfurecer
engrandecer
engrumecerse
enhambrecer
enloquecer
enllentecer
enmagrecer
enmalecer
enmarillecerse
enmohecer
enmollecer
enmudecer
ennegrecer
ennoblecer
enorgullecer
enrarecer
enriquecer
enrobustecer
enrojecer
enroquecer
enroñecer
enruinecerse
ensandecer
ensoberbecer
ensordecer
entallecer
entenebrecer
enternecer
entigrecerse
entontecerse
entorpecer
entreparecerse
entristecer
entullecer

entumecer
evanecer
envejecer
enverdecer
envilecer
enzurdecer
escandecer
escarnecer
esclarecer
establecer
estremecer
fallecer
favorecer
fenecer
florecer
fortalecer
gemecer
guarecer
guarnecer
herbecer
humedecer
languidecer
lobreguecer
merecer
mohecer
nacer
negrecer
obedecer
oscurecer
ofrecer
pacer
padecer
palidecer
parecer
perecer
permanecer
pertenecer
pimpollecer
plastecer
podrecer
preconocer
prevalecer
reagradecer
reaparecer
reblandecer
reconocer
reconvalecer
recrecer
recrudecer
reflorecer
rehumedecer
rejuvenecer
relentecer
renacer
repacer
repadecer
resplandecer
restablecer
retallecer
retoñecer
revejecer
robustecer
sobrecrecer
tallecer
verdecer

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fourth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert **z** before **c**, when followed by a termination commencing with **a** or **o** *

179. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **LUCIR** = TO SHINE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **lucir,** to shine. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **luciendo,** shining. PAST PARTICIPLE. **lucido,** shone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	luzco	I shine (do shine, am shining)
	luces	thou shinest
	luce	he shines
V.	**luce**	your honor shines
	lucimos	we shine
	lucís	ye shine
	lucen	they shine
VV.	**lucen**	your honors shine

Imperfect

	lucía	I was shining	*or* used to shine.
	lucías	thou wast shining	
	lucía	he was shining	
V.	**lucía**	your honor was shining	
	lucíamos	we were shining	
	lucíais	ye were shining	
	lucían	they were shining	
VV.	**lucían**	your honors were shining	

Past Definite

	lucí	I shone
	luciste	thou didst shine
	lució	he shone
V.	**lució**	your honors shone
	lucimos	we shone
	lucisteis	ye shone
	lucieron	they shone
VV.	**lucieron**	your honors shone

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	luzca	that I shine	*or* may shine, etc.
	luzcas	that thou shine	
	luzca	that he shine	
V.	**luzca**	that your honor shine	
	luzcamos	that we shine	
	luzcáis	that ye shine	
	luzcan	that they shine	
VV.	**luzcan**	that your honors shine	

Imperfect (First Form)

	luciera	that I should shine	*or* shone.
	lucieras	that thou shouldst shine	
	luciera	that he should shine	
V.	**luciera**	that your honor should shine	
	luciéramos	that we should shine	
	lucierais	that ye should shine	
	lucieran	that they should shine	
VV.	**lucieran**	that your honors should shine	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	luciese	that I shone	*or* should shine, etc.
	lucieses	that thou shone	
	luciese	that he shone	
V.	**luciese**	that your honor shone	
	luciésemos	that we shone	
	lucieseis	that ye shone	
	luciesen	that they shone	
VV.	**luciesen**	that your honors shone	

* Where these changes occur, the letter is printed in italic.

Future

	lucirè	I shall shine
	lucirás	thou wilt shine
	lucirá	he will shine
V.	**lucirá**	your honor will shine
	luciremos	we shall shine
	lucirèis	ye will shine
	lucirán	they will shine
VV.	**lucirán**	your honors will shine

Conditional (Consequent)

	lucirías	I should shine
	lucirías	thou wouldst shine
	lucirías	he would shine
V.	**lucirías**	your honor would shine
	luciríamos	we should shine
	lucirías	ye would shine
	lucirían	they would shine
VV.	**lucirían**	your honors would shine

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.		**luciere**	if, when, while, although, etc.	I shine	*or* shall shine, etc.
		lucieres		thou shine	
		luciere		he shine	
	V.	**luciere**		your honors shine	
		luciéremos		we shine	
		luciereis		ye shine	
		lucieren		they shine	
	VV.	**lucieren**		your honors shine	

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**luciera**	or **luciese**	if	I should shine	*or* shone, etc.
		lucieras	or **lucieses**		thou shouldst shine	
		luciera	or **luciese**		he should shine	
	V.	**luciera**	or V. **luciese**		your honor should shine	
		luciéramos	or **luciésemos**		we should shine	
		lucierais	or **lucieseis**		ye should shine	
		lucieran	or **luciesen**		they should shine	
	VV.	**lucieran**	or VV. **luciesen**		your honors should shine	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

luce	shine (thou)	**no luzcas**	shine (thou) not
lucid	shine (ye)	**no luzcáis**	shine (ye) not
luzca	let me shine	**no luzca**	let me not shine
luzca	let him shine	**no luzca**	let him not shine
luzca V.	shine, your honor	**no luzca** V.	shine not, your honor
luzcamos	let us shine	**no luzcamos**	let us not shine
luzcan	let them shine	**no luzcan**	let them not shine
luzcan VV.	shine, your honors	**no luzcan** VV.	shine not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber lucido,** to have shone.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo lucido,** having shone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he lucido,** etc.	I have shone, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había lucido,** etc	I had shone, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube lucido,** etc.	(when) I had shone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré lucido,** etc.	I shall have shone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría lucido,** etc.	I should have shone, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya lucido,** etc	that I have *or* may have shone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera lucido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had shone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese lucido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have shone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere lucido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have shone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese lucido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had shone, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

deslucir. **enlucir.** **entrelucir.** **prelucir.** **relucir.** **traslucirse.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fifth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert **y** before ending when stem is tonic or followed by **a** or **o***

180. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ATRIBUIR** = TO ASCRIBE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **atribuir,** to ascribe. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **atribuyendo,** ascribing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **atribuido,** ascribed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	atribu*y*o	I ascribe (do ascribe, am ascribing)
	atribu*y*es	thou ascribest
	atribu*y*e	he ascribes
V.	**atribu*y*e**	your honor ascribes
	atribu*í*mos	we ascribe
	atribu*í*s	ye ascribe
	atribu*y*en	they ascribe
VV.	**atribu*y*en**	your honors ascribe

Imperfect

	atribu*í*a	I was ascribing
	atribu*í*as	thou wast ascribing
	atribu*í*a	he was ascribing
V.	**atribu*í*a**	your honor was ascribing
	atribu*í*amos	we were ascribing
	atribu*í*ais	ye were ascribing
	atribu*í*an	they were ascribing
VV.	**atribu*í*an**	your honors were ascribing

or used to ascribe.

Past Definite

	atribu*í*	I ascribed
	atribu*í*ste	thou didst ascribe
	atribu*y*ó	he ascribed
V.	**atribu*y*ó**	your honor ascribed
	atribu*í*mos	we ascribed
	atribu*í*steis	ye ascribed
	atribu*y*eron	they ascribed
VV.	**atribu*y*eron**	your honors ascribed

Future

	atribu*í*ré	I shall ascribe
	atribu*í*rás	thou wilt ascribe
	atribu*í*rá	he will ascribe
V.	**atribu*í*rá**	your honor will ascribe
	atribu*í*remos	we shall ascribe
	atribu*í*réis	ye will ascribe
	atribu*í*rán	they will ascribe
VV.	**atribu*í*rán**	your honors will ascribe

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	atribu*y*a	that I ascribe
	atribu*y*as	that thou ascribe
	atribu*y*a	that he ascribe
V.	**atribu*y*a**	that your honor ascribe
	atribu*y*amos	that we ascribe
	atribu*y*áis	that ye ascribe
	atribu*y*an	that they ascribe
VV.	**atribu*y*an**	that your honors ascribe

or may ascribe, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	atribuyera	that I should ascribe
	atribuyeras	that thou shouldst ascribe
	atribuyera	that he should ascribe
V.	**atribuyera**	that your honor should ascribe
	atribuyéramos	that we should ascribe
	atribuyerais	that ye should ascribe
	atribuyeran	that they should ascribe
VV.	**atribuyeran**	that your honors should ascribe

or ascribed.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	atribuyese	that I ascribed
	atribuyeses	that thou ascribed
	atribuyese	that he ascribed
V.	**atribuyese**	that your honor ascribed
	atribuyésemos	that we ascribed
	atribuyeseis	that ye ascribed
	atribuyesen	that they ascribed
VV.	**atribuyesen**	that your honor ascribed

or should ascribe, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	atribuyere	
	atribuyeres	
	atribuyere	
V.	**atribuyere**	
	atribuyéremos	
	atribuyereis	
	atribuyeren	
VV.	**atribuyeren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

	I ascribe
	thou ascribe
	he ascribe
	your honor ascribe
	we ascribe
	ye ascribe
	they ascribe
	your honors ascribe

or shall ascribe, etc.

* Where the changes occur the letter is printed in italic. NOTE. — See also orthographic change under **creer**, p. 68.

Conditional (Consequent)

	atribuiría	I should ascribe
	atribuirías	thou wouldst ascribe
	atribuiría	he would ascribe
V.	**atribuiría**	your honor would ascribe
	atribuiríamos	we should ascribe
	atribuiríais	ye would ascribe
	atribuirían	they would ascribe
VV.	**atribuirían**	your honors would ascribe

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**atribuyera**	or	**atribuyese**	if	I should ascribe	*or* ascribed.
		atribuyeras	or	**atribuyeses**		thou shouldst ascribe	
		atribuyera	or	**atribuyese**		he should ascribe	
	V.	**atribuyera**	or V.	**atribuyese**		your honor should ascribe	
		atribuyéramos	or	**atribuyésemos**		we should ascribe	
		atribuyerais	or	**atribuyeseis**		ye should ascribe	
		atribuyeran	or	**atribuyesen**		they should ascribe	
	VV.	**atribuyeran**	or VV.	**atribuyesen**		your honors should ascribe	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

atribuye	ascribe (thou)	**no atribuyas**	ascribe (thou) not
atribuid	ascribe (ye)	**no atribuyáis**	ascribe (ye) not
atribuya	let me ascribe	**no atribuya**	let me not ascribe
atribuya	let him ascribe	**no atribuya**	let him not ascribe
atribuya V.	ascribe, your honor	**no atribuya** V.	ascribe not, your honor
atribuyamos	let us ascribe	**no atribuyamos**	let us not ascribe
atribuyan	let them ascribe	**no atribuyan**	let them not ascribe
atribuyan VV.	ascribe, your honors	**no atribuyan** VV.	ascribe not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber atribuido,** to have ascribed.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo atribuido,** having ascribed.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he atribuido,** etc.	I have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había atribuido,** etc.	I had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube atribuido,** etc.	(when) I had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré atribuido,** etc.	I shall have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría atribuido,** etc.	I should have ascribed, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya atribuido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera atribuido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had ascribed, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese atribuido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere atribuido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have ascribed, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese atribuido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had ascribed, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

circuir.	**derruir.**	**disminuir.**	**huir.**	**luir.**	**refluir.**
concluir.	**desobstruir.**	**distribuir.**	**imbuir.**	**muir.**	**rehuir.**
confluir.	**destituir.**	**estatuir.**	**incluir.**	**obstruir.**	**restituir.**
constituir.	**destruir.**	**excluir.**	**influir.**	**prostituir.**	**retribuir.**
construir.	**difluir.**	**fluir.**	**instituir.**	**recluir.**	**sustituir.**
contribuir.	**diluir.**	**gruir.**	**instruir.**	**reconstruir.**	

IRREGULAR VERBS — Fifth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, insert **y** before ending when stem is tonic, or when followed by **a** or **o** *

181. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ARGÜIR** = TO ARGUE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **argüir,** to argue. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **arguyendo,** arguing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **argüido,** argued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	argu*y*o	I argue (do argue, am arguing)
	argu*y*es	thou arguest
	argu*y*e	he argues
V.	**argu*y*e**	your honor argues
	argüimos	we argue
	argüis	ye argue
	argu*y*en	they argue
VV.	**argu*y*en**	your honors argue

Imperfect

	argüía	I was arguing
	argüías	thou wast arguing
	argüía	he was arguing
V.	**argüía**	your honor was arguing
	argüíamos	we were arguing
	argüíais	ye were arguing
	argüían	they were arguing
VV.	**argüían**	your honors were arguing

or used to argue.

Past Definite

	argüí	I argued
	argüiste	thou didst argue
	arguyó	he argued
V.	**arguyó**	your honor argued
	argüimos	we argued
	argüisteis	ye argued
	argüyeron	they argued
VV.	**argüyeron**	your honors argued

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	argu*y*a	that I argue
	argu*y*as	that thou argue
	argu*y*a	that he argue
V.	**argu*y*a**	that your honor argue
	argu*y*amos	that we argue
	argu*y*áis	that ye argue
	argu*y*an	that they argue
VV.	**argu*y*an**	that your honors argue

or may argue, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	arguyera	that I should argue
	arguyeras	that thou shouldst argue
	arguyera	that he should argue
V.	**arguyera**	that your honor should argue
	arguyéramos	that we should argue
	arguyerais	that ye should argue
	arguyeran	that they should argue
VV.	**arguyeran**	that your honors should argue

or argued.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	arguyese	that I argued
	arguyeses	that thou argued
	arguyese	that he argued
V.	**arguyese**	that your honor argued
	arguyésemos	that we argued
	arguyeseis	that ye argued
	arguyesen	that they argued
VV.	**arguyesen**	that your honors argued

or should argue, etc.

* Where these changes occur the letter is printed in italic. NOTE. — See also orthographic change under **creer,** p. 68.

Future

argüiré	I shall argue
argüirás	thou wilt argue
argüirá	he will argue
V. **argüirá**	your honor will argue
argüiremos	we shall argue
argüiréis	ye will argue
argüirán	they will argue
VV. **argüirán**	your honors will argue

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

arguyere	I argue
arguyeres	thou argue
arguyere	he argue
V. **arguyere**	your honor argue
arguyéremos	we argue
arguyereis	ye argue
arguyeren	they argue
VV. **arguyeren**	your honors argue

if, when, while although, etc. — *or* shall argue, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

argüiría	I should argue
argüirías	thou wouldst argue
argüiría	he would argue
V. **argüiría**	your honor would argue
argüiríamos	we should argue
argüiríais	ye would argue
argüirían	they would argue
VV. **argüirían**	your honors would argue

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

arguyera	or	**arguyese**	I should argue
arguyeras	or	**arguyeses**	thou shouldst argue
arguyera	or	**arguyese**	he should argue
V. **arguyera**	or	V. **arguyese**	your honor should argue
arguyéramos	or	**arguyésemos**	we should argue
arguyerais	or	**arguyeseis**	ye should argue
arguyeran	or	**arguyesen**	they should argue
VV. **arguyeran**	or	VV **arguyesen**	your honors should argue

if — *or* argued.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

argu*y*e	argue (thou)	**no argu*y*as**	argue (thou) not
argüid	argue (ye)	**no argu*y*áis**	argue (ye) not
argu*y*a	let me argue	**no argu*y*a**	let me not argue
argu*y*a	let him argue	**no argu*y*a**	let him not argue
argu*y*a V.	argue, your honor	**no argu*y*a** V.	argue not, your honor
argü*y*amos	let us argue	**no argu*y*amos**	let us not argue
argu*y*an	let them argue	**no argu*y*an**	let them not argue
argu*y*an VV.	argue, your honors	**no argu*y*an** VV.	argue not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber argüido,** to have argued.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo argüido,** having argued.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he argüido,** etc.	I have argued, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había argüido,** etc.	I had argued, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube argüido,** etc.	(when) I had argued, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré argüido,** etc.	I shall have argued, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría argüido,** etc.	I should have argued, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya argüido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have argued, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera argüido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had argued, etc.
Comp. Imp (2d form)	**hubiese argüido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have argued, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere argüido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have argued, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese argüido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had argued, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

redargüir, to retort.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, First Conjugation

Past Definite stem, **Anduv** *

182. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ANDAR** = TO GO (INDEFINITELY)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **andar**, to go. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **andando**, going. PAST PARTICIPLE: **andado**, gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	ando	I go (do go, am going)
	andas	thou goest
	anda	he goes
V.	**anda**	your honor goes
	andamos	we go
	andáis	ye go
	andan	they go
VV.	**andan**	your honors goes

Imperfect

	andaba	I was going
	andabas	thou wast going
	andaba	he was going
V.	**andaba**	your honor was going
	andábamos	we were going
	andabais	ye were going
	andaban	they were going
VV.	**andaban**	your honors were going

or used to go.

Past Definite

	and*uv*e	I went
	and*uv*iste	thou didst go
	and*uv*o	he went
V.	**and*uv*o**	your honor went
	and*uv*imos	we went
	and*uv*isteis	ye went
	and*uv*ieron	they went
VV.	**and*uv*ieron**	your honors went

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	ande	that I go
	andes	that thou go
	ande	that he go
V.	**ande**	that your honor go
	andemos	that we go
	andéis	that ye go
	anden	that they go
VV.	**anden**	that your honors go

or may go, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	and*uv*iera	that I should go
	and*uv*ieras	that thou shouldst go
	and*uv*iera	that he should go
V.	**and*uv*iera**	that your honor should go
	and*uv*iéramos	that we should go
	and*uv*ierais	that ye should go
	and*uv*ieran	that they should go
VV.	**and*uv*ieran**	that your honors should go

or went.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	and*uv*iese	that I went
	and*uv*ieses	that thou went
	and*uv*iese	that he went
V.	**and*uv*iese**	that your honor went
	and*uv*iésemos	that we went
	and*uv*ieseis	that ye went
	and*uv*iesen	that they went
VV.	**and*uv*iesen**	that your honors went

or should go, etc.

* Wherever the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

andaré	I shall go
andarás	thou wilt go
andará	he will go
V. **andará**	your honor will go
andaremos	we shall go
andaréis	ye will go
andarán	they will go
VV. **andarán**	your honors will go

Conditional (*Consequent*)

andaría	I should go
andarías	thou wouldst go
andaría	he would go
V. **andaría**	your honor would go
andaríamos	we should go
andaríais	ye would go
andarían	they would go
VV. **andarían**	your honors would go

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	and*uv*iere	if, when, while, although, etc.	I go
	and*uv*ieres		thou go
	and*uv*iere		he go
V.	**and*uv*iere**		your honor go
	and*uv*iéremos		we go
	and*uv*iereis		ye go
	and*uv*ieren		they go
VV.	**and*uv*ieren**		your honors go

or shall go, etc

Conditional (*Antecedent*)

si

	and*uv*iera	or	**and*uv*iese**	if	I should go
	and*uv*ieras	or	**and*uv*ieses**		thou shouldst go
	and*uv*iera	or	**and*uv*iese**		he should go
V.	**and*uv*iera**	or V.	**and*uv*iese**		your honor should go
	and*uv*iéramos	or	**and*uv*iésemos**		we should go
	and*uv*ierais	or	**and*uv*ieseis**		ye should go
	and*uv*ieran	or	**and*uv*iesen**		they should go
VV.	**and*uv*ieran**	or VV.	**and*uv*iesen**		your honors should go

or went, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

anda	go (thou)	**no andes**	go (thou) not
andad	go (ye)	**no andéis**	go (ye) not
ande	let me go	**no ande**	let me not go
ande	let him go	**no ande**	let him not go
ande V.	go, your honor	**no ande** V.	go not, your honor
andemos	let us go	**no andemos**	let us not go
anden	let them go	**no anden**	let them not go
anden VV.	go, your honors	**no anden** VV.	go not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber andado,** to have gone.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo andado,** having gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he andado,** etc.	I have gone, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había andado,** etc.	I had gone, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube andado,** etc.	(when) I had gone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré andado,** etc.	I shall have gone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría andado,** etc.	I should have gone, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya andado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have gone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera andado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese andado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have gone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere andado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have gone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese andado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone, etc.

1. **Andar** expresses a general, ill-defined going, or refers to inanimate objects or animals, e. g. *andar á gatas*, to go on all fours; *mi reloj anda; mula, anda.*
2. **Ir** expresses a going in a definite direction, and refers to persons, e. g. *voy al teatro*, I am going to the theater.
3. **Ir á** means, to be going to, to be about to, e. g. *voy á decirte*, I am going to tell you.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desandar, to retrograde, to go back the same way.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **quep**, before **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **cup**. Future Stem, **cabr** *

183. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **CABER** (en) = TO HOLD, TO BE CONTAINED IN

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **caber**, to hold. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cabiendo**, holding. PAST PARTICIPLE: **cabido**, held.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	que*p*o	I hold (do hold, am holding)
	cabes	thou holdest
	cabe	he holds
V.	**cabe**	your honor holds
	cabemos	we hold
	cabéis	ye hold
	caben	they hold
VV.	**caben**	your honors hold

Imperfect

	cabía	I was holding
	cabías	thou wast holding
	cabía	he was holding
V.	**cabía**	your honor was holding
	cabíamos	we were holding
	cabíais	ye were holding
	cabían	they were holding
VV.	**cabían**	your honors were holding

or used to hold.

Past Definite

	c*u*pe	I held
	c*u*piste	thou didst hold
	c*u*po	he held
V.	**c*u*po**	your honor held
	c*u*pimos	we held
	c*u*pisteis	ye held
	c*u*pieron	they held
VV.	**c*u*pieron**	your honors held

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	que*p*a	that I hold
	que*p*as	that thou hold
	que*p*a	that he hold
V.	**que*p*a**	that your honor hold
	que*p*amos	that we hold
	que*p*áis	that ye hold
	que*p*an	that they hold
VV.	**que*p*an**	that your honors hold

or may hold, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	c*u*piera	that I should hold
	c*u*pieras	that thou shouldst hold
	c*u*piera	that he should hold
V.	**c*u*piera**	that your honor should hold
	c*u*piéramos	that we should hold
	c*u*pierais	that ye should hold
	c*u*pieran	that they should hold
VV.	**c*u*pieran**	that your honors should hold

or held.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	c*u*piese	that I held
	c*u*pieses	that thou held
	c*u*piese	that he held
V.	**c*u*piese**	that your honor held
	c*u*piésemos	that we held
	c*u*pieseis	that ye held
	c*u*piesen	that they held
VV.	**c*u*piesen**	that your honors held

or should hold, etc.

* Wherever the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

ca*br*é	I shall hold
ca*br*ás	thou wilt hold
ca*br*á	he will hold
V. **ca*br*á**	your honor will hold
ca*br*emos	we shall hold
ca*br*éis	ye will hold
ca*br*án	they will hold
VV. **ca*br*án**	your honors will hold

Conditional (Consequent)

ca*br*ía	I should hold
ca*br*ías	thou wouldst hold
ca*br*ía	he would hold
V. **ca*br*ía**	your honor would hold
ca*br*íamos	we should hold
ca*br*íais	ye would hold
ca*br*ían	they would hold
VV. **ca*br*ían**	your honors would hold

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.:

cu*p*iere	I hold
cu*p*ieres	thou hold
cu*p*iere	he hold
V. **cu*p*iere**	your honor hold
cu*p*iéremos	we hold
cu*p*iereis	ye hold
cu*p*ieren	they hold
VV. **cu*p*ieren**	your honors hold

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall hold, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si:

cu*p*iera	or	**cu*p*iese**	I should hold
cu*p*ieras	or	**cu*p*ieses**	thou shouldst hold
cu*p*iera	or	**cu*p*iese**	he should hold
V. **cu*p*iera**	or	V. **cu*p*iese**	your honor should hold
cu*p*iéramos	or	**cu*p*iésemos**	we should hold
cu*p*ierais	or	**cu*p*ieseis**	ye should hold
cu*p*ieran	or	**cu*p*iesen**	they should hold
VV. **cu*p*ieran**	or	VV. **cu*p*iesen**	your honors should hold

if — *or* held.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

cabe	hold (thou)	**no *quep*as**	hold (thou) not
cabed	hold (ye)	**no *quep*áis**	hold (ye) not
***quep*a**	let me hold	**no *quep*a**	let me not hold
***quep*a**	let him hold	**no *quep*a**	let him not hold
***quep*a** V.	hold, your honor	**no *quep*a** V.	hold not, your honor
***quep*amos**	let us hold	**no *quep*amos**	let us not hold
***quep*an**	let them hold	**no *quep*an**	let them not hold
***quep*an** VV.	hold, your honors	**no *quep*an** VV.	hold not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber cabido,** to have held.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo cabido,** having held.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he cabido,** etc.	I have held, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había cabido,** etc.	I had held, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube cabido,** etc.	(when) I had held, etc.
Comp. Fut	**habré cabido,** etc.	I shall have held, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría cabido,** etc.	I should have held, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya cabido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have held, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera cabido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had held, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese cabido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have held, etc.
Comp. Fut	**hubiere cabido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have held, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese cabido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had held, etc.

1. In this sense **caber** is always construed with **en**; e. g. *en este cuarto caben cien personas*, this room holds a hundred persons.
2. **Caber** signifies also "to be capable of," in a moral sense; e. g. *todo cabe en él*, he is capable of anything.
3. **Caber** is also used impersonally, meaning "it is possible;" e. g. *si cabe*, if it is possible.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present stem, **dig** before **a, o**; **dic** when tonic and followed by **e**. Past definite stem, **dij**. Future stem, **dir** *

184. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DECIR** = TO TELL, SAY

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **decir**, to tell. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **d*i*ciendo**, telling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **d*icho***, told.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	d*ig*o	I tell (do tell, am telling)
	d*i*ces	thou tellest
	d*i*ce	he tells
V.	**d*i*ce**	your honor tells
	decimos	we tell
	decís	ye tell
	d*i*cen	they tell
VV.	**d*i*cen**	your honors tell

Imperfect

	decía	I was telling
	decías	thou wast telling
	decía	he was telling
V.	**decía**	your hon or was telling
	decíamos	we were telling
	decíais	ye were telling
	decían	they were telling
VV.	**decían**	your honors were telling

or used to tell.

Past Definite

	d*ij*e	I told
	d*ij*iste	thou didst tell
	d*ij*o	he told
V.	**d*ij*o**	your honor told
	d*ij*imos	we told
	d*ij*isteis	ye told
	d*ij*eron	they told
VV.	**d*ij*eron**	your honors told

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	d*ig*a	that I tell
	d*ig*as	that thou tell
	d*ig*a	that he tell
V.	**d*ig*a**	that your honor tell
	d*ig*amos	that we tell
	d*ig*áis	that ye tell
	d*ig*an	that they tell
VV.	**d*ig*an**	that your honors tell

or may tell, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	d*ij*era	that I should tell
	d*ij*eras	that thou shouldst tell
	d*ij*era	that he should tell
V.	**d*ij*era**	that your honor should tell
	d*ij*éramos	that we should tell
	d*ij*erais	that ye should tell
	d*ij*eran	that they should tell
VV.	**d*ij*eran**	that your honors should tell

or told.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	d*ij*ese	that I told
	d*ij*eses	that thou told
	d*ij*ese	that he told
V.	**d*ij*ese**	that your honor told
	d*ij*ésemos	that we told
	d*ij*eseis	that ye told
	d*ij*esen	that they told
VV	**d*ij*esen**	that your honors told

or should tell etc.

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic. Notice the irregular past participle, **d*icho***.

Future

	diré	I shall tell
	dirás	thou wilt tell
	dirá	he will tell
V.	**di**rá	your honor will tell
	diremos	we shall tell
	diréis	ye will tell
	dirán	they will tell
VV.	**di**rán	your honors will tell

Conditional (Consequent)

	diría	I should tell
	dirías	thou wouldst tell
	diría	he would tell
V.	**di**ría	your honor would tell
	diríamos	we should tell
	diríais	ye would tell
	dirían	they would tell
VV.	**di**rían	your honors would tell

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	dijere	I tell
	dijeres	thou tell
	dijere	he tell
V.	**dij**ere	your honor tell
	dijéremos	we tell
	dijereis	ye tell
	dijeren	they tell
VV.	**dij**eren	your honors tell

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall tell etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	dijera	or	**dij**ese		I should tell
	dijeras	or	**dij**eses		thou shouldst tell
	dijera	or	**dij**ese		he should tell
V.	**dij**era	or	V. **dij**ese		your honor should tell
	dijéramos	or	**dij**ésemos		we should tell
	dijerais	or	**dij**eseis		ye should tell
	dijeran	or	**dij**esen		they should tell
VV.	**dij**eran	or	VV. **dij**esen		your honors should tell

if

or told. etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

dí	tell (thou)	**no di**gas	tell (thou) not
decid	tell (ye)	**no di**gáis	tell (ye) not
diga	let me tell	**no di**ga	let me not tell
diga	let him tell	**no di**ga	let him not tell
diga V.	tell, your honor	**no di**ga V.	tell not, your honor
digamos	let us tell	**no di**gamos	let us not tell
digan	let them tell	**no di**gan	let them not tell
digan VV.	tell, your honors	**no di**gan VV.	tell not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **dice** is abbreviated to **dí**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber** *dicho*, to have told.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo** *dicho*, having told.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he** *dicho*, etc.	I have told, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había** *dicho*, etc.	I had told, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube** *dicho*, etc.	(when) I had told, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré** *dicho*, etc.	I shall have told, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría** *dicho*, etc.	I should have told, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya** *dicho*, etc.	that I have *or* may have told, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera** *dicho*, etc.	that I should have *or* had told, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese** *dicho*, etc.	that I had *or* should have told, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere** *dicho*, etc.	that I have *or* shall have told, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese** *dicho*, etc.	that I should have *or* had told, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

antedecir. bendecir. contradecir. desdecir. entredecir. interdecir. maldecir. predecir. rebendecir.

1. Except in the second person singular imperative affirmative, *antedice*, *bendice*, etc.
2. *Bendecir*, *maldecir*, have also pp. *bendito*, *maldito*. Fut. *bendeciré*, *maldeciré*, etc.; conditional, *bendeciría*, *maldeciría*, etc. Usage varies concerning the fut. and the condit. ind. of the other verbs, with the inclination towards the regular forms.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **traduzc**, before **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **traduj** *

185. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **TRADUCIR** = TO TRANSLATE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **traducir**, to translate. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **traduciendo**, translating. PAST PARTICIPLE: **traducido**, translated.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	traduzco	I translate (do translate, am translating)
	traduces	thou translatest
	traduce	he translates
V.	**traduce**	your honor translates
	traducimos	we translate
	traducís	ye translate
	traducen	they translate
VV.	**traducen**	your honors translate

Imperfect

	traducía	I was translating	or used to translate.
	traducías	thou wast translating	
	traducía	he was translating	
V.	**traducía**	your honor was translating	
	traducíamos	we were translating	
	traducíais	ye were translating	
	traducían	they were translating	
VV.	**traducían**	your honors were translating	

Past Definite

	tradu*je*	I translated
	tradu*j*iste	thou didst translate
	tradu*jo*	he translated
V.	**tradu*jo***	your honor translated
	tradu*j*imos	we translated
	tradu*j*isteis	ye translated
	tradu*j*eron	they translated
VV.	**tradu*j*eron**	your honors translated

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	traduzca	that I translate	or may translate, etc.
	traduzcas	that thou translate	
	traduzca	that he translate	
V.	**traduzca**	that your honor translate	
	traduzcamos	that we translate	
	traduzcáis	that ye translate	
	traduzcan	that they translate	
VV.	**traduzcan**	that your honors translate	

Imperfect (First Form)

	tradu*j*era	that I should translate	or translated.
	tradu*j*eras	that thou shouldst translate	
	tradu*j*era	that he should translate	
V.	**tradu*j*era**	that your honor should translate	
	tradu*j*éramos	that we should translate	
	tradu*j*erais	that ye should translate	
	tradu*j*eran	that they should translate	
VV.	**tradu*j*eran**	that your honors should translate	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	tradu*j*ese	that I translated	or should translate, etc.
	tradu*j*eses	that thou translated	
	tradu*j*ese	that he translated	
V.	**tradu*j*ese**	that your honors translated	
	tradu*j*ésemos	that we translated	
	tradu*j*eseis	that ye translated	
	tradu*j*esen	that they translated	
VV.	**tradu*j*esen**	that your honor translated	

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

Future

	traduciré	I shall translate
	traducirás	thou wilt translate
	traducirá	he will translate
V.	**traducirá**	your honor will translate
	traduciremos	we shall translate
	traducireis	ye will translate
	traducirán	they will translate
VV.	**traducirán**	your honors will translate

Conditional (Consequent)

	traduciria	I should translate
	traducirias	thou wouldst translate
	traduciria	he would translate
V.	**traduciria**	your honor would translate
	traduciriamos	we should translate
	traduciriais	ye would translate
	traducirian	they would translate
VV.	**traducirian**	your honor would translate

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	tradu/ere	I translate
	tradu/eres	thou translate
	tradu/ere	he translate
V.	**tradu/ere**	your honor translate
	tradu/éremos	we translate
	tradu/ereis	ye translate
	tradu/eren	they translate
VV.	**tradu/eren**	your honors translate

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall translate, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	tradu/era	or	**tradu/ese**		I should translate
	tradu/eras	or	**tradu/eses**		thou shouldst translate
	tradu/era	or	**tradu/ese**		he should translate
V.	**tradu/era**	or	**tradu/ese**	V.	your honor should translate
	tradu/éramos	or	**tradu/ésemos**		we should translate
	tradu/erais	or	**tradu/eseis**		ye should translate
	tradu/eran	or	**tradu/esen**		they should translate
VV.	**tradu/eran**	or	**tradu/esen**	VV.	your honors should translate

if

or translated.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

traduce	translate (thou)	**no traduzcas**	translate (thou) not
traducid	translate (ye)	**no traduzcáis**	translate (ye) not
traduzca	let me translate	**no traduzca**	let me not translate
traduzca	let him translate	**no traduzca**	let him not translate
traduzca V.	translate, your honor	**no traduzca** V.	translate not, your honor
traduzcamos	let us translate	**no traduzcamos**	let us not translate
traduzcan	let them translate	**no traduzcan**	let them not translate
traduzcan VV.	translate, your honors	**no traduzcan** VV.	translate not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber traducido,** to have translated.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo traducido,** having translated.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he traducido,** etc.	I have translated, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había traducido,** etc.	I had translated, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube traducido,** etc.	(when) I had translated, etc.
Comp. Fut	**habré traducido,** etc.	I shall have translated, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habria traducido,** etc.	I should have translated, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya traducido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have translated, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera traducido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had translated, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese traducido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have translated, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere traducido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have translated, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese traducido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had translated, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aducir.	**deducir.**	**inducir.**	**producir**	**reducir.**
conducir.	**educir.**	**introducir.**	**reconducir.**	**reproducir.**

All follow **ducir,** now obsolete.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **hag,** before **a** or **o.** Past Definite Stem, **hic.** Future Stem, **har** *

186. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **HACER** = TO MAKE, TO DO

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **hacer,** to make. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **haciendo,** making. PAST PARTICIPLE: *hecho,* made.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	ha*g*o	I make (do make, am making)
	haces	thou makest
	hace	he makes
V.	**hace**	your honor makes
	hacemos	we make
	hacéis	ye make
	hacen	they make
VV.	**hacen**	your honors make

Imperfect

	hacía	I was making
	hacías	thou wast making
	hacía	he was making
V.	**hacía**	your honor was making
	haciamos	we were making
	haciais	ye were making
	hacian	they were making
VV.	**hacían**	your honors were making

or used to make.

Past Definite

	h*i*ce	I made
	h*i*ciste	thou didst make
	h*i*zo	he made
V.	**h*i*zo**	your honor made
	h*i*cimos	we made
	h*i*cisteis	ye made
	h*i*cieron	they made
VV.	**h*i*cieron**	your honors made

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	ha*g*a	that I make
	ha*g*as	that thou make
	ha*g*a	that he make
V.	**ha*g*a**	that your honor make
	ha*g*amos	that we make
	ha*g*ais	that ye make
	ha*g*an	that they make
VV.	**ha*g*an**	that your honors make

or may make, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	h*i*ciera	that I should make
	h*i*cieras	that thou shouldst make
	h*i*ciera	that he should make
V.	**h*i*ciera**	that your honor should make
	h*i*ciéramos	that we should make
	h*i*cierais	that ye should make
	h*i*cieran	that they should make
VV.	**h*i*cieran**	that your honors should make

or make.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	h*i*ciese	that I made
	h*i*cieses	that thou made
	h*i*ciese	that he made
V.	**h*i*ciese**	that your honor made
	h*i*ciésemos	that we made
	h*i*cieseis	that ye made
	h*i*ciesen	that they made
VV.	**h*i*ciesen**	that your honors made

or should make, etc.

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics. Notice the irregular past participle, *hecho.*

Future

	haré	I shall make
	harás	thou wilt make
	hará	he will make
V.	**hará**	your honor will make
	haremos	we shall make
	haréis	ye will make
	harán	they will make
VV.	**harán**	your honors will make

Conditional (Consequent)

	haría	I should make
	harías	thou wouldst make
	haría	he would make
V.	**haría**	your honor would make
	haríamos	we should make
	haríais	ye would make
	harían	they would make
VV.	**harían**	your honors would make

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	hiciere	I make
	hicieres	thou make
	hiciere	he make
V.	**hiciere**	your honor make
	hiciéremos	we make
	hiciereis	ye make
	hicieren	they make
VV.	**hicieren**	your honors make

if, when, while, although, etc. — *or* shall make, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	hiciera	or	**hiciese**		I should make
	hicieras	or	**hicieses**		thou shouldst make
	hiciera	or	**hiciese**		he should make
V.	**hiciera**	or	V. **hiciese**		your honor should make
	hiciéramos	or	**hiciésemos**		we should make
	hicierais	or	**hicieseis**		ye should make
	hicieran	or	**hiciesen**		they should make
VV.	**hicieran**	or	VV. **hiciesen**		your honors should make

if — *or* made.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

haz	make (thou)	**no hagas**	make (thou) not
haced	make (ye)	**no hagáis**	make (ye) not
haga	let me make	**no haga**	let me not make
haga	let him make	**no haga**	let him not make
haga V.	make, your honor	**no haga** V.	make not, your honor
hagamos	let us make	**no hagamos**	let us not make
hagan	let them make	**no hagan**	let them not make
hagan VV.	make, your honors	**no hagan** VV.	make not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **hace** is abbreviated to **haz**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber** *hecho*, to have made.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo** *hecho*, having made.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he** *hecho*, etc.	I have made, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había** *hecho*, etc.	I had made, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube** *hecho*, etc.	(when) I had made, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré** *hecho*, etc.	I shall have made, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría** *hecho*, etc.	I should have made, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya** *hecho*, etc.	that I have *or* may have made, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera** *hecho*, etc.	that I should have *or* had made, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese** *hecho*, etc.	that I had *or* should have made, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere** *hecho*, etc.	that I have *or* shall have made, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese** *hecho*, etc.	that I should have *or* had made, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

deshacer.	and also	**liquefacer.**	**satisfacer.**
rehacer.	**contrahacer.**	**rarefacer.**	**tumefacerse.**

Except in the second person singular imperative affirmative *contrahace* or *contrahaz*, *liqueface* or *liquefaz*, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **pued,** when tonic. Past Definite Stem, **pud.** Future Stem, **podr** *

187. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **PODER** = TO BE ABLE (CAN)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **poder,** to be able. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **p*u*diendo,** being able. PAST PARTICIPLE: **podido,** been able.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present

	p*ue*do	I am able
	p*ue*des	thou art able
	p*ue*de	he is able
V.	**p*ue*de**	your honor is able
	podemos	we are able
	podéis	ye are able
	p*ue*den	they are able
VV.	**p*ue*den**	your honors are able

Imperfect

	podía	I was able	*or* used to be able.
	podías	thou wast able	
	podía	he was able	
V.	**podía**	your honor was able	
	podíamos	we were able	
	podíais	ye were able	
	podían	they were able	
VV.	**podían**	your honors were able	

Past Definite

	p*u*de	I was able
	p*u*diste	thou wast able
	p*u*do	he was able
V.	**p*u*do**	your honor was able
	p*u*dimos	we were able
	p*u*disteis	ye were able
	p*u*dieron	they were able
VV.	**p*u*dieron**	your honors were able

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	p*ue*da	that I be able	*or* may be able, etc.
	p*ue*das	that thou be able	
	p*ue*da	that he be able	
V.	**p*ue*da**	that your honor be able	
	podamos	that we be able	
	podáis	that ye be able	
	p*ue*dan	that they be able	
VV.	**p*ue*dan**	that your honors be able	

Imperfect (First Form)

	p*u*diera	that I should be able	*or* were able.
	p*u*dieras	that thou shouldst be able	
	p*u*diera	that he should be able	
V.	**p*u*diera**	that your honor should be able	
	p*u*diéramos	that we should be able	
	p*u*dierais	that ye should be able	
	p*u*dieran	that they should be able	
VV.	**p*u*dieran**	that your honors should be able	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	p*u*diese	that I were able	*or* should be able, etc.
	p*u*dieses	that thou were able	
	p*u*diese	that he were able	
V.	**p*u*diese**	that your honor were able	
	p*u*diésemos	that we were able	
	p*u*dieseis	that ye were able	
	p*u*diesen	that they were able	
VV.	**p*u*diesen**	that your honors were able	

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	podré	I shall be able
	podrás	thou wilt be able
	podrá	he will be able
V.	**podrá**	your honor will be able
	podremos	we shall be able
	podréis	ye will be able
	podrán	they will be able
VV.	**podrán**	your honors will be able

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	pudiere	I be able	
	pudieres	thou be able	
	pudiere	he be able	
V.	**pudiere**	your honor be able	
	pudiéremos	we be able	
	pudiereis	ye be able	
	pudieren	they be able	
VV.	**pudieren**	your honors be able	

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall be able, etc.

Conditional (*Consequent*)

	podría	I should be able
	podrías	thou wouldst be able
	podría	he would be able
V.	**podría**	your honor would be able
	podríamos	we should be able
	podríais	ye would be able
	podrían	they would be able
VV.	**podrían**	your honors would be able

Conditional (*Antecedent*)

si

	pudiera	or	**pudiese**		I should be able
	pudieras	or	**pudieses**		thou shouldst be able
	pudiera	or	**pudiese**		he should be able
V.	**pudiera**	or V.	**pudiese**		your honor should be able
	pudiéramos	or	**pudiésemos**		we should be able
	pudierais	or	**pudieseis**		ye should be able
	pudieran	or	**pudiesen**		they should be able
VV.	**pudieran**	or VV.	**pudiesen**		your honors should be able

if

or were able.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber podido,** to have been able.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo podido,** having been able.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he podido,** etc.	I have been able, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había podido,** etc.	I had been able, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube podido,** etc.	(when) I had been able, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré podido,** etc.	I shall have been able, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría podido,** etc.	I should have been able, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya podido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have been able, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera podido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been able, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese podido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have been able, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere podido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have been able, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese podido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been able, etc.

NOTE.— As a neuter verb (in the sense of to be able) **poder,** on account of its meaning, is usually considered as having no true imperative and is so treated by grammarians. But its use is exactly the same as that of **nacer,** to be born, see p. 198. And under certain circumstances an imperative would be legitimate, e. g.: The Lord said "be able," and he was able (to do so and so). The Grammar of the Spanish Academy gives the true imperative **puede** *tú*; and, as in the case of *nacer*, the plural **poded** could just as well be used.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **pong** before **a** or **o**. Past definite stem, **pus**. Future stem, **pondr***

188. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB PONER = TO PUT, TO PLACE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **poner**, to put. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **poniendo**, putting. PAST PARTICIPLE: *puesto*, put.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	pon*g*o	I put (do put, am putting)
	ponés	thou puttest
	pone	he puts
V.	**pone**	your honor puts
	ponemos	we put
	ponéis	ye put
	ponen	they put
VV.	**ponen**	your honors put

Imperfect

	ponía	I was putting
	ponías	thou wast putting
	ponía	he was putting
V.	**ponía**	your honor was putting
	poníamos	we were putting
	poníais	ye were putting
	ponían	they were putting
VV.	**ponían**	your honors were putting

or used to put.

Past Definite

	p*us*e	I put
	p*us*iste	thou didst put
	p*us*o	he put
V.	**p*us*o**	your honor put
	p*us*imos	we put
	p*us*isteis	ye put
	p*us*ieron	they put
VV.	**p*us*ieron**	your honors put

Future

	pon*dr*é	I shall put
	pon*dr*ás	thou wilt put
	pon*dr*á	he will put
V.	**pon*dr*á**	your honor will put
	pon*dr*emos	we shall put
	pon*dr*éis	ye will put
	pon*dr*án	they will put
VV.	**pon*dr*án**	your honors will put

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	pon*g*a	that I put
	pon*g*as	that thou put
	pon*g*a	that he put
V.	**pon*g*a**	that your honor put
	pon*g*amos	that we put
	pon*g*áis	that ye put
	pon*g*an	that they put
VV.	**pon*g*an**	that your honors put

or may put, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	p*us*iera	that I should put
	p*us*ieras	that thou shouldst put
	p*us*iera	that he should put
V.	**p*us*iera**	that your honor should put
	p*us*iéramos	that we should put
	p*us*ierais	that ye should put
	p*us*ieran	that they should put
VV.	**p*us*ieran**	that your honors should put

or put.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	p*us*iese	that I put
	p*us*ieses	that thou put
	p*us*iese	that he put
V.	**p*us*iese**	that your honor put
	p*us*iésemos	that we put
	p*us*ieseis	that ye put
	p*us*iesen	that they put
VV.	**p*us*iesen**	that your honors put

or should put, etc.

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	p*us*iere	
	p*us*ieres	
	p*us*iere	
V.	**p*us*iere**	
	p*us*iéremos	
	p*us*iereis	
	p*us*ieren	
VV.	**p*us*ieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I put	
thou put	
he put	
your honor put	
we put	
ye put	
they put	
your honors put	

or shall put, etc.

*Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic. Notice the irregular past part. *puesto*.

Conditional (Consequent)

pon*dría*	I should put
pon*dría*s	thou wouldst put
pon*dría*	he would put
V. **pon*dría***	your honor would put
pon*dría*mos	we should put
pon*dría*is	ye would put
pon*dría*n	they would put
VV. **pon*dría*n**	your honors would put

Conditional (Antecedent)

si	**p*usiera***	or	**p*usiese***	if	I should put
	p*usiera*s	or	**p*usiese*s**		thou shouldst put
	p*usiera*	or	**p*usiese***		he should put
	V. **p*usiera***	or	V. **p*usiese***		your honor should put
	p*usiéra*mos	or	**p*usiése*mos**		we should put
	p*usiera*is	or	**p*usiese*is**		ye should put
	p*usiera*n	or	**p*usiese*n**		they should put
	VV. **p*usiera*n**	or	VV. **p*usiese*n**		your honors should put

or put.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE.

pon	put (thou)	**no pon*gas***	put (thou) not
poned	put (ye)	**no pon*gáis***	put (ye) not
pon*ga*	let me put	**no pon*ga***	let me not put
pon*ga*	let him put	**no pon*ga***	let him not put
pon*ga* V.	put, your honor	**no pon*ga* V.**	put not your honor
pon*gamos*	let us put	**no pon*gamos***	let us not put
pon*gan*	let them put	**no pon*gan***	let them not put
pon*gan* VV.	put, your honors	**no pon*gan* VV.**	put not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber** *puesto*, to have put.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo** *puesto*, having put.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he puesto**, etc.	I have put, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había puesto**, etc.	I had put, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube puesto**, etc.	(when) I had put, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré puesto**, etc.	I shall have put, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría puesto**, etc.	I should have put, etc

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya puesto**, etc.	that I have *or* may have put, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera puesto**, etc.	that I should have *or* had put, etc.
Comp Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese puesto**, etc.	that I had *or* should have put, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere puesto**, etc.	that I have *or* shall have put, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese puesto**, etc.	that I should have *or* had put, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

anteponer.	**descomponer.**	**entreponer.**	**indisponer.**	**posponer.**	**presuponer.**	**reponer.**	**suponer.**
componer.	**desimponer.**	**exponer.**	**interponer.**	**predisponer.**	**proponer.**	**sobreponer.**	**trasponer.**
contraponer.	**disponer.**	**imponer.**	**oponer.**	**preponer.**	**recomponer.**	**superponer.**	**yuxtaponer.**
deponer.							

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **quier,** when tonic. Past Definite Stem, **quis.** Future Stem, **querr** *

189. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **QUERER** = TO WILL, TO BE WILLING, TO WISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **querer,** to wish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **queriendo,** wishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **queridо,** wished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	qu*ie*ro	I wish (do wish, am wishing)
	qu*ie*res	thou wishest
	qu*ie*re	he wishes
V.	**qu*ie*re**	your honor wishes
	queremos	we wish
	queréis	ye wish
	qu*ie*ren	they wish
VV.	**qu*ie*ren**	your honors wish

Imperfect

	quería	I was wishing
	querías	thou wast wishing
	quería	he was wishing
V.	**quería**	your honor was wishing
	queríamos	we were wishing
	queríais	ye were wishing
	querían	they were wishing
VV.	**querían**	your honors were wishing

or used to wish, etc.

Past Definite

	qu*is*e	I wished
	qu*is*iste	thou didst wish
	qu*is*o	he wished
V.	**qu*is*o**	your honor wished
	qu*is*imos	we wished
	qu*is*isteis	ye wished
	qu*is*ieron	they wished
VV.	**qu*is*ieron**	your honors wished

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	qu*ie*ra	that I wish
	qu*ie*ras	that thou wish
	qu*ie*ra	that he wish
V.	**qu*ie*ra**	that your honor wish
	queramos	that we wish
	queráis	that ye wish
	qu*ie*ran	that they wish
VV.	**qu*ie*ran**	that your honors wish

or may wish, ect.

Imperfect (First Form)

	qu*is*iera	that I should wish
	qu*is*ieras	that thou shouldst wish
	qu*is*iera	that he should wish
V.	**qu*is*iera**	that your honor should wish
	qu*is*iéramos	that we should wish
	qu*is*ierais	that ye should wish
	qu*is*ieran	that they should wish
VV.	**qu*is*ieran**	that your honors should wish

or wished.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	qu*is*iese	that I wished
	qu*is*ieses	that thou wished
	qu*is*iese	that he wished
V.	**qu*is*iese**	that your honor wished
	qu*is*iésemos	that we wished
	qu*is*ieseis	that ye wished
	qu*is*iesen	that they wished
VV.	**qu*is*iesen**	that your honors wished

or should wish, etc.

*Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	querré	I shall wish
	querrás	thou wilt wish
	querrá	he will wish
V.	**querrá**	your honor will wish
	querremos	we shall wish
	querréis	ye will wish
	querrán	they will wish
VV.	**querrán**	your honor will wish

Conditional (Consequent)

	querría	I should wish
	querrías	thou wouldst wish
	querría	he would wish
V.	**querría**	your honor would wish
	querríamos	we should wish
	querríais	ye would wish
	querrían	they would wish
VV.	**querrían**	your honors would wish

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	quisiere	
	quisieres	
	quisiere	
V.	**quisiere**	
	quisiéremos	
	quisiereis	
	quisieren	
VV.	**quisieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I wish	
thou wish	
he wish	
your honor wish	
we wish	
ye wish	
they wish	
your honors wish	

or shall wish, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	quisiera	or	**quisiese**	
	quisieras	or	**quisieses**	
	quisiera	or	**quisiese**	
V.	**quisiera**	or	V. **quisiese**	
	quisiéramos	or	**quisiésemos**	
	quisierais	or	**quisieseis**	
	quisieran	or	**quisiesen**	
VV.	**quisieran**	or	VV. **quisiesen**	

if

I should wish
thou shouldst wish
he should wish
your honor should wish
we should wish
ye should wish
they should wish
your honors should wish

or wished.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

quiere	wish (thou)	**no quieras**	wish (thou) not
quered	wish (ye)	**no queráis**	wish (ye) not
quiera	let me wish	**no quiera**	let me not wish
quiera	let him wish	**no quiera**	let him not wish
quiera V.	wish, your honor	**no quiera** V.	wish not, your honor
queramos	let us wish	**no queramos**	let us not wish
quieran	let them wish	**no quieran**	let them not wish
quieran VV.	wish, your honors	**no quieran** VV.	wish not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber querido,** to have wished.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo querido,** having wished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he querido,** etc.	I have wished, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había querido,** etc.	I had wished, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube querido,** etc.	(when) I had wished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré querido,** etc.	I shall have wished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría querido,** etc.	I should have wished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya querido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera querido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had wished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese querido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have wished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere querido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have wished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese querido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had wished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

bienquerer (see p. 201). **malquerer** (see p. 202). **requerer.**

Querer means 'will,' in sense of to be willing, to wish; e. g. Will you read to me? *¿Quiere V. leerme?*

When 'will' is used to indicate simple futurity, or 'would' is used conditionally, the future and conditional of corresponding verb must be used; e. g., When will you go? *¿Cuándo irá V.?* When would you go, if etc.? *¿Cuándo iría V. si etc.?*

Querer á, to love, to be fond of: *quiero á mi amiga,* I love my friend.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **sep,** when followed by **a** or **o.** Past Definite Stem, **sup.** Future Stem, **sabr** *

190. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **SABER** = TO KNOW (THINGS)

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **saber,** to know. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **sabiendo,** knowing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **sabido,** known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	sé †	I know (do know, am knowing)
	sabes	thou knowest
	sabe	he knows
V.	**sabe**	your honor knows
	sabemos	we know
	sabéis	ye know
	saben	they know
VV.	**saben**	your honors know

Imperfect

	sabía	I was knowing	*or* used to know.
	sabías	thou wast knowing	
	sabía	he was knowing	
V.	**sabía**	your honor was knowing	
	sabíamos	we were knowing	
	sabíais	ye were knowing	
	sabían	they were knowing	
VV.	**sabían**	your honors were knowing	

Past Definite

	s*up*e	I knew
	s*up*iste	thou didst know
	s*up*o	he knew
V.	**s*up*o**	your honor knew
	s*up*imos	we knew
	s*up*isteis	ye knew
	s*up*ieron	they knew
VV.	**s*up*ieron**	your honors knew

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	s*ep*a	that I know	*or* may know, etc.
	s*ep*as	that thou know	
	s*ep*a	that he know	
V.	**s*ep*a**	that your honor know	
	s*ep*amos	that we know	
	s*ep*áis	that ye know	
	s*ep*an	that they know	
VV.	**s*ep*an**	that your honors know	

Imperfect (First Form)

	s*up*iera	that I should know	*or* knew.
	s*up*ieras	that thou shouldst know	
	s*up*iera	that he should know	
V.	**s*up*iera**	that your honor should know	
	s*up*iéramos	that we should know	
	s*up*ierais	that ye should know	
	s*up*ieran	that they should know	
VV.	**s*up*ieran**	that your honors should know	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	s*up*iese	that I knew	*or* should know, etc.
	s*up*ieses	that thou knew	
	s*up*iese	that he knew	
V.	**s*up*iese**	that your honor knew	
	s*up*iésemos	that we knew	
	s*up*ieseis	that ye knew	
	s*up*iesen	that they knew	
VV.	**s*up*iesen**	that your honors knew	

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italics.

† First person singular present indicative is a contraction of **sepo.**

Future

	sa*b*ré	I shall know
	sa*b*rás	thou wilt know
	sa*b*rá	he will know
V.	**sa*b*rá**	your honor will know
	sa*b*remos	we shall know
	sa*b*réis	ye will know
	sa*b*rán	they will know
VV.	**sa*b*ran**	your honors will know

Conditional (Consequent)

	sa*b*ría	I should know
	sa*b*rías	thou wouldst know
	sa*b*ría	he would know
V.	**sa*b*ría**	your honor would know
	sa*b*ríamos	we should know
	sa*b*ríais	ye would know
	sa*b*rían	they would know
VV.	**sa*b*rían**	your honors would know

Future

si, cuando, mien tras, aunque, etc

	su*p*iere		I know
	su*p*ieres		thou know
	su*p*iere		he know
V.	**su*p*iere**		your honor know
	su*p*iéremos		we know
	su*p*iereis		ye know
	su*p*ieren		they know
VV.	**su*p*ieren**		your honors know

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall know, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	su*p*iera	or	**su*p*iese**		I should know
	su*p*ieras	or	**su*p*ieses**		thou shouldst know
	su*p*iera	or	**su*p*iese**		he should know
V.	**su*p*iera**	or	V. **su*p*iese**		your honor should know
	su*p*iéramos	or	**su*p*iésemos**		we should know
	su*p*ierais	or	**su*p*ieseis**		ye should know
	su*p*ieran	or	**su*p*iesen**		they should know
VV.	**su*p*ieran**	or	VV. **su*p*iesen**		your honors should know

if

or knew.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sabe	know (thou)	**no se*p*as**	know (thou) not
sabed	know (ye)	**no se*p*áis**	know (ye) not
se*p*a	let me know	**no se*p*a**	let me not know
se*p*a	let him know	**no se*p*a**	let him not know
se*p*a V.	know, your honor	**no se*p*a** V.	know not, your honor
se*p*amos	let us know	**no se*p*amos**	let us not know
se*p*an	let them know	**no se*p*an**	let them not know
se*p*an VV.	know, your honors	**no se*p*an** VV.	know not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber sabido,** to have known.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo sabido,** having known.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he sabido,** etc.	I have known, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había sabido,** etc.	I had known, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube sabido,** etc.	(when) I had known, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré sabido,** etc.	I shall have known, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría sabido,** etc.	I should have known, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya sabido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have known, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera sabido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had known, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese sabido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have known, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere sabido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have known, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese sabido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had known, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

resaber.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **teng** when followe l by **a** or **o**; **tien** when tonic and followed by **e**. Past Definite Stem, **tuv**. Future Stem, **tendr** *

191. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **TENER** = TO HAVE, TO POSSESS, TO HOLD

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **tener**, to have. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **teniendo**, having. PAST PARTICIPLE: **tenido**, had.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	ten*g*o	I have (do have, am having)
	t*ie*nes	thou hast
	t*ie*ne	he has
V.	**t*ie*ne**	your honor has
	tenemos	we have
	tenéis	ye have
	t*ie*nen	they have
VV.	**t*ie*nen**	your honors have

Imperfect (*or* used to have.)

	tenía	I was having
	tenías	thou wast having
	tenía	he was having
V.	**tenía**	your honor was having
	teníamos	we were having
	teníais	ye were having
	tenían	they were having
VV.	**tenían**	your honors were having

Past Definite

	t*uv*e	I had
	t*uv*iste	thou hadst
	t*uv*o	he had
V.	**t*uv*o**	your honor had
	t*uv*imos	we had
	t*uv*isteis	ye had
	t*uv*ieron	they had
VV.	**t*uv*ieron**	your honors had

Future

	ten*dré*	I shall have
	ten*dr*ás	thou wilt have
	ten*dr*á	he will have
V.	**ten*dr*á**	your honor will have
	ten*dr*emos	we shall have
	ten*dr*éis	ye will have
	ten*dr*án	they will have
VV.	**ten*dr*án**	your honors will have

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present (*or* may have, etc.)

	ten*g*a	that I have
	ten*g*as	that thou have
	ten*g*a	that he have
V.	**ten*g*a**	that your honor have
	ten*g*amos	that we have
	ten*g*áis	that ye have
	ten*g*an	that they have
VV.	**ten*g*an**	that your honors have

Imperfect (*First Form*) (*or* had.)

	t*uv*iera	that I should have
	t*uv*ieras	that thou shouldst have
	t*uv*iera	that he should have
V.	**t*uv*iera**	that your honor should have
	t*uv*iéramos	that we should have
	t*uv*ierais	that ye should have
	t*uv*ieran	that they should have
VV.	**t*uv*ieran**	that your honors should have

Imperfect (*Second Form*) (*or* should have, etc.)

	t*uv*iese	that I had
	t*uv*ieses	that thou had
	t*uv*iese	that he had
V.	**t*uv*iese**	that your honor had
	t*uv*iésemos	that we had
	t*uv*ieseis	that ye had
	t*uv*iesen	that they had
VV.	**t*uv*iesen**	that your honors had

Future (*or* shall have, etc.)

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	t*uv*iere	
	t*uv*ieres	
	t*uv*iere	
V.	**t*uv*iere**	
	t*uv*iéremos	
	t*uv*iereis	
	t*uv*ieren	
VV.	**t*uv*ieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

	I have
	thou have
	he have
	your honor have
	we have
	ye have
	they have
	your honors have

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italics.

Conditional (Consequent)

	ten*dría*	I should have
	ten*drías*	thou wouldst have
	ten*dría*	he would have
V.	**ten*dría***	your honor would have
	ten*dríamos*	we should have
	ten*dríais*	ye would have
	ten*drían*	they would have
VV.	**ten*drían***	your honors would have

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**t*uvie*ra**	or	**t*uvie*se**	if	I should have
		t*uvie*ras	or	**t*uvie*ses**		thou shouldst have
		t*uvie*ra	or	**t*uvie*se**		he should have
	V.	**t*uvie*ra**	or V.	**t*uvie*se**		your honor should have
		t*uvié*ramos	or	**t*uvié*semos**		we should have
		t*uvie*rais	or	**t*uvie*seis**		ye should have
		t*uvie*ran	or	**t*uvie*sen**		they should have
	VV.	**t*uvie*ran**	or VV.	**t*uvie*sen**		your honors should have

or had.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ten	have (thou)	**no ten*gas***	have (thou) not
tened	have (ye)	**no ten*gáis***	have (ye) not
ten*ga*	let me have	**no ten*ga***	let me not have
ten*ga*	let him have	**no ten*ga***	let him not have
ten*ga* V.	have, your honor	**no ten*ga* V.**	have not, your honor
ten*gamos*	let us have	**no ten*gamos***	let us not have
ten*gan*	let them have	**no ten*gan***	let them not have
ten*gan* VV.	have, your honors	**no ten*gan* VV.**	have not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **tiene**, is abbreviated to **ten**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber tenido**, to have had.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo tenido**, having had.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he tenido**, etc.	I have had, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había tenido**, etc.	I had had, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube tenido**, etc.	(when) I had had, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré tenido**, etc.	I shall have had, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría tenido**, etc.	I should have had, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya tenido**, etc.	that I have *or* may have had, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera tenido**, etc.	that I should have *or* had had, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese tenido**, etc.	that I had *or* should have had, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere tenido**, etc.	that I have or shall have had, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese tenido**, etc.	that I should have *or* had had, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abstenerse.	**contener.**	**entretener.**	**obtener.**	**sostener.**
atenerse.	**detener.**	**mantener.**	**retener.**	

Tener means 'have,' in sense of possess; e. g., I have a hat, *tengo un sombrero*; never, *he un sombrero*. **Haber** is simply used as an auxiliary verb. **Tener** is sometimes used in place of **haber** as an auxiliary verb — it then also implies the idea of possession in the compound tenses, and the past participle agrees in gender and number; e. g., *tengo escrita la carta*, I have (possess) the letter written; but, *he escrito la carta*, I have written the letter. **Tener a**, to hold; e. g., *tengo al caballo*, I hold the horse.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **traig** before **a** or **o**. Past Definite Stem, **traj** *

192. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **TRAER** = TO BRING

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **traer**, to bring. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **trayendo**, bringing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **traído**, brought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	trai*g*o	I bring (do bring, am bringing)
	traes	thou bringest
	trae	he brings
V.	**trae**	your honor brings
	traemos	we bring
	traéis	ye bring
	traen	they bring
VV.	**traen**	your honors bring

Imperfect

	traía	I was bringing	or used to bring.
	traías	thou wast bringing	
	traía	he was bringing	
V.	**traía**	your honor was bringing	
	traíamos	we were bringing	
	traíais	ye were bringing	
	traían	they were bringing	
VV.	**traían**	your honors were bringing	

Past Definite

	tra*j*e	I brought
	tra*j*iste	thou didst bring
	tra*j*o	he brought
V.	**tra*j*o**	your honor brought
	tra*j*imos	we brought
	tra*j*isteis	ye brought
	tra*j*eron	they brought
VV.	**tra*j*eron**	your honors brought

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	trai*g*a	that I bring	or may bring, etc.
	trai*g*as	that thou bring	
	trai*g*a	that he bring	
V.	**trai*g*a**	that your honor bring	
	trai*g*amos	that we bring	
	trai*g*áis	that ye bring	
	trai*g*an	that they bring	
VV.	**trai*g*an**	that your honors bring	

Imperfect (First Form)

	tra*j*era	that I should bring	or brought.
	tra*j*eras	that thou shouldst bring	
	tra*j*era	that he should bring	
V.	**tra*j*era**	that your honor should bring	
	tra*j*éramos	that we should bring	
	tra*j*erais	that ye should bring	
	tra*j*eran	that they should bring	
VV.	**tra*j*eran**	that your honors should bring	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	tra*j*ese	that I brought	or should bring, etc.
	tra*j*eses	that thou brought	
	tra*j*ese	that he brought	
V.	**tra*j*ese**	that your honor brought	
	tra*j*ésemos	that we brought	
	tra*j*eseis	that ye brought	
	tra*j*esen	that they brought	
VV.	**tra*j*esen**	that your honors brought	

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	traeré	I shall bring
	traerás	thou wilt bring
	traerá	he will bring
V.	**traerá**	your honor will bring
	traeremos	we shall bring
	traeréis	ye will bring
	traerán	they will bring
VV.	**traerán**	your honors will bring

Conditional (Consequent)

	traería	I should bring
	traerías	thou wouldst bring
	traería	he would bring
V.	**traería**	your honor would bring
	traeríamos	we should bring
	traeríais	ye would bring
	traerían	they would bring
VV.	**traerían**	your honors would bring

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	trajere	
	trajeres	
	trajere	
V.	**trajere**	
	trajéremos	
	trajereis	
	trajeren	
VV.	**trajeren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I bring	
thou bring	
he bring	
your honor bring	
we bring	
ye bring	
they bring	
your honors bring	

or shall bring, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	trajera	or	**trajese**	
	trajeras	or	**trajeses**	
	trajera	or	**trajese**	
V.	**trajera**	or V.	**trajese**	
	trajéramos	or	**trajésemos**	
	trajerais	or	**trajeseis**	
	trajeran	or	**trajesen**	
VV.	**trajeran**	or VV.	**trajesen**	

if

I should bring
thou shouldst bring
he should bring
your honor should bring
we should bring
ye should bring
they should bring
your honors should bring

or brought.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

trae	bring (thou)	**no traigas**	bring (thou) not
traed	bring (ye)	**no traigáis**	bring (ye) not
traiga	let me bring	**no traiga**	let me not bring
traiga	let him bring	**no traiga**	let him not bring
traiga V.	bring, your honor	**no traiga** V.	bring not, your honor
traigamos	let us bring	**no traigamos**	let us not bring
traigan	let them bring	**no traigan**	let them not bring
traigan VV.	bring, your honors	**no traigan** VV.	bring not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber traído,** to have brought.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo traído,** having brought.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he traído,** etc.	I have brought, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había traído,** etc.	I had brought, etc.
Comp. Past. Def.	**hube traído,** etc.	(when) I had brought, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré traído,** etc.	I shall have brought, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría traído,** etc.	I should have brought, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya traído,** etc.	that I have *or* may have brought, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera traído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had brought, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese traído,** etc.	that I had *or* should have brought, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere traído,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have brought, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese traído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had brought, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

abstraer.	**contraer.**	**detraer.**	**extraer.**	**retraer.**	**sustraer.**
atraer.	**desatraer.**	**distraer.**	**maltraer.**	**retrotraer.**	

IRREGULAR VERBS — Sixth Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **veng** when followed by **a** or **o**; **vien** when tonic and followed by **e**. Past Definite Stem, **vin**. Future Stem, **vendr** *

193. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **VENIR** = TO COME

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **venir**, to come. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **viniendo**, coming. PAST PARTICIPLE: **venido**, come.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	vengo	I come (do come, am coming)
	vienes	thou comest
	viene	he comes
V.	**viene**	your honor comes
	venimos	we come
	venís	ye come
	vienen	they come
VV.	**vienen**	your honors come

Imperfect

	venía	I was coming	*or* used to come.
	venías	thou wast coming	
	venía	he was coming	
V.	**venía**	your honor was coming	
	veníamos	we were coming	
	veníais	ye were coming	
	venían	they were coming	
VV.	**venían**	your honors were coming	

Past Definite

	vine	I came
	viniste	thou didst come
	vino	he came
V.	**vino**	your honor came
	vinimos	we came
	vinisteis	ye came
	vinieron	they came
VV.	**vinieron**	your honors came

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	venga	that I come	*or* may come, etc.
	vengas	that thou come	
	venga	that he come	
V.	**venga**	that your honor come	
	vengamos	that we come	
	vengáis	that ye come	
	vengan	that they come	
VV.	**vengan**	that your honors come	

Imperfect (First Form)

	viniera	that I should come	*or* came.
	vinieras	that thou shouldst come	
	viniera	that he should come	
V.	**viniera**	that your honor should come	
	viniéramos	that we should come	
	vinierais	that ye should come	
	vinieran	that they should come	
VV.	**vinieran**	that your honors should come	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	viniese	that I came	*or* should come, etc.
	vinieses	that thou came	
	viniese	that he came	
V.	**viniese**	that your honor came	
	viniésemos	that we came	
	vinieseis	that ye came	
	viniesen	that they came	
VV.	**viniesen**	that your honors came	

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	vendré	I shall come
	vendrás	thou wilt come
	vendrá	he will come
V.	**vendrá**	your honor will come
	vendremos	we shall come
	vendréis	ye will come
	vendrán	they will come
VV.	**vendrán**	your honors will come

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	viniere	I come
	vinieres	thou come
	viniere	he come
V.	**viniere**	your honor come
	viniéremos	we come
	vinieres	ye come
	vinieren	they come
VV.	**vinieren**	your honors come

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall come, etc.

Conditional (Consequent)

	vendría	I should come
	vendrías	thou wouldst come
	vendría	he would come
V.	**vendría**	your honor would come
	vendríamos	we should come
	vendríais	ye would come
	vendrían	they would come
VV.	**vendrían**	your honors would come

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	viniera	or	**viniese**	
	vinieras	or	**vinieses**	
	viniera	or	**viniese**	
V.	**viniera**	or	V. **viniese**	
	viniéramos	or	**viniésemos**	
	vinierais	or	**vinieseis**	
	vinieran	or	**viniesen**	
VV.	**vinieran**	or	VV. **viniesen**	

if

I should come	
thou shouldst come	
he should come	
your honor should come	
we should come	
ye should come	
they should come	
your honors should come	

or came.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ven	come (thou)	**no vengas**	come (thou) not
venid	come (ye)	**no vengáis**	come (ye) not
venga	let me come	**no venga**	let me not come
venga	let him come	**no venga**	let him not come
venga V.	come, your honor	**no venga** V.	come not, your honor
vengamos	let us come	**no vengamos**	let us not come
vengan	let them come	**no vengan**	let them not come
vengan VV.	come, your honors	**no vengan** VV.	come not, your honors

Imperative second person singular instead of being **viene** is abbreviated to *ven*.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber venido,** to have come.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo venido,** having come.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he venido,** etc.	I have come, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había venido,** etc.	I had come, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube venido,** etc.	(when) I had come, etc.
Comp. Fut	**habré venido,** etc.	I shall have come, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría venido,** etc.	I should have come, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya venido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have come, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera venido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had come, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese venido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have come, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere venido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have come, etc.
Comp. Con.	**hubiera** or **hubiese venido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had come, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

avenir.	**convenir.**	**desconvenir.**	**intervenir.**	**provenir.**	**revenirse.**	**subvenir.**
contravenir.	**desavenir.**	**disconvenir.**	**prevenir.**	**reconvenir.**	**sobrevenir.**	**supervenir.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **asg**, when followed by **a** or **o** *

194. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ASIR** = TO GRASP, TO LAY HOLD OF

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **asir**, to grasp. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **asiendo**, grasping. PAST PARTICIPLE: **asido**, grasped.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	as*g*o	I grasp (do grasp, am grasping)
	ases	thou graspest
	ase	he grasps
V.	**ase**	your honor grasps
	asimos	we grasp
	asís	ye grasp
	asen	they grasp
VV.	**asen**	your honors grasp

Imperfect

	asía	I was grasping
	asías	thou wast grasping
	asía	he was grasping
V.	**asía**	your honor was grasping
	asíamos	we were grasping
	asíais	ye were grasping
	asían	they were grasping
VV.	**asían**	your honors were grasping

or used to grasp.

Past Definite

	así	I grasped
	asiste	thou didst grasp
	asió	he grasped
V.	**asió**	your honor grasped
	asimos	we grasped
	asisteis	ye grasped
	asieron	they grasped
VV.	**asieron**	your honors grasped

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	as*g*a	that I grasp
	as*g*as	that thou grasp
	as*g*a	that he grasp
V.	**as*g*a**	that your honor grasp
	as*g*amos	that we grasp
	as*g*áis	that ye grasp
	as*g*an	that they grasp
VV.	**as*g*an**	that your honors grasp

or may grasp, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	asiera	that I should grasp
	asieras	that thou shouldst grasp
	asiera	that he should grasp
V.	**asiera**	that your honor should grasp
	asiéramos	that we should grasp
	asierais	that ye should grasp
	asieran	that they should grasp
VV.	**asieran**	that your honors should grasp

or grasped.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	asiese	that I grasped
	asieses	that thou grasped
	asiese	that he grasped
V.	**asiese**	that your honor grasped
	asiésemos	that we grasped
	asieseis	that ye grasped
	asiesen	that they grasped
VV.	**asiesen**	that your honors grasped

or should grasp, etc.

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	asiré	I shall grasp
	asirás	thou wilt grasp
	asirá	he will grasp
V.	**asirá**	your honor will grasp
	asiremos	we shall grasp
	asiréis	ye will grasp
	asirán	they will grasp
VV.	**asirán**	your honors will grasp

Conditional (Consequent)

	asiría	I should grasp
	asirías	thou wouldst gra
	asiría	he would grasp
V.	**asiría**	your honor would grasp
	asiríamos	we should grasp
	asiríais	ye would grasp
	asirían	they would grasp
VV.	**asirían**	your honors would grasp

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	asiere	
	asiere	
	asiere	
V.	**asiere**	
	asiéremos	
	asiereis	
	asieren	
VV.	**asieren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

I grasp	
thou grasp	
he grasp	
your honor grasp	
we grasp	
ye grasp	
they grasp	
your honors grasp	

or shall grasp.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	asiera	or	**asiese**	
	asieras	or	**asieses**	
	asiera	or	**asiese**	
V.	**asiera**	or	V. **asiese**	
	asiéramos	or	**asiésemos**	
	asierais	or	**asieseis**	
	asieran	or	**asiesen**	
VV.	**asieran**	or	VV. **asiesen**	

if

I should grasp
thou shouldst grasp
he should grasp
your honor should grasp
we should grasp
ye should grasp
they should grasp
your honors should grasp

or grasped, etc.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ase	grasp (thou)	**no as*g*as**	grasp (thou) not
asid	grasp (ye)	**no as*g*áis**	grasp (ye) not
as*g*a	let me grasp	**no as*g*a**	let me not grasp
as*g*a	let him grasp	**no as*g*a**	let him not grasp
as*g*a V.	grasp, your honor	**no as*g*a** V.	grasp not, your honor
as*g*amos	let us grasp	**no as*g*amos**	let us not grasp
as*g*an	let them grasp	**no as*g*an**	let them not grasp
as*g*an VV.	grasp, your honors	**no as*g*an** VV.	grasp not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber asido,** to have grasped.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo asido,** having grasped.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he asido,** etc.	I have grasped, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había asido,** etc.	I had grasped, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube asido,** etc.	(when) I had grasped, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré asido,** etc.	I shall have grasped, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría asido,** etc.	I should have grasped, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya asido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have grasped, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera asido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had grasped, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese asido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have grasped, etc.
Comp. Fut	**hubiere asido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have grasped, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese asido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had grasped, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desasir.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **caig** before **a** or **o** *

195. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **CAER** = TO FALL, TO TUMBLE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **caer,** to fall. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **cayendo,** falling. PAST PARTICIPLE: **caído,** fallen.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	ca*ig*o	I fall (do fall, am falling)
	caes	thou fallest
	cae	he falls
V.	**cae**	your honor falls
	caemos	we fall
	caéis	ye fall
	caen	they fall
VV.	**caen**	your honors fall

Imperfect

	caía	I was falling	*or* used to fall.
	caías	thou wast falling	
	caía	he was falling	
V.	**caía**	your honor was falling	
	caíamos	we were falling	
	caíais	ye were falling	
	caían	they were falling	
VV.	**caían**	your honors were falling	

Past Definite

	caí	I fell
	caíste	thou didst fall
	cayó	he fell
V.	**cayó**	your honor fell
	caímos	we fell
	caísteis	ye fell
	cayeron	they fell
VV.	**cayeron**	your honors fell

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	ca*ig*a	that I fall	*or* may fall, etc.
	ca*ig*as	that thou fall	
	ca*ig*a	that he fall	
V.	**ca*ig*a**	that your honor fall	
	ca*ig*amos	that we fall	
	ca*ig*áis	that ye fall	
	ca*ig*an	that they fall	
VV.	**ca*ig*an**	that your honors fall	

Imperfect (First Form)

	cayera	that I should fall	*or* fell.
	cayeras	that thou shouldst fall	
	cayera	that he should fall	
V.	**cayera**	that your honor should fall	
	cayéramos	that we should fall	
	cayerais	that ye should fall	
	cayeran	that they should fall	
VV.	**cayeran**	that your honors should fall	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	cayese	that I fell	*or* should fall, etc.
	cayeses	that thou fell	
	cayese	that he fell	
V.	**cayese**	that your honor fell	
	cayésemos	that we fell	
	cayeseis	that ye fell	
	cayesen	that they fell	
VV.	**cayesen**	that your honors fell	

* Where the changes occur the letters are printed in italic.

NOTE. — Past Definite stem changes **i** to **y**, in diphthongs **ie, ió** (see *creer*).

Future

	caeré	I shall fall
	caerás	thou wilt fall
	caerá	he will fall
V.	**caerá**	your honor will fall
	caeremos	we shall fall
	caeréis	ye will fall
	caerán	they will fall
VV.	**caerán**	your honors will fall

Conditional (Consequent)

	caería	I should fall
	caerías	thou wouldst fall
	caería	he would fall
V.	**caería**	your honor would fall
	caeríamos	we should fall
	caeríais	ye would fall
	caerían	they would fall
VV.	**caerían**	your honors would fall

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	cayere	
	cayeres	
	cayere	
V.	**cayere**	
	cayéremos	
	cayereis	
	cayeren	
VV.	**cayeren**	

if, when, while, although, etc.

	I fall	
	thou fall	
	he fall	
	your honor fall	
	we fall	
	ye fall	
	they fall	
	your honors fall	

or shall fall, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	cayera	or	**cayese**	
	cayeras	or	**cayeses**	
	cayera	or	**cayese**	
V.	**cayera**	or	V. **cayese**	
	cayéramos	or	**cayésemos**	
	cayerais	or	**cayeseis**	
	cayeran	or	**cayesen**	
VV.	**cayeran**	or	VV. **cayesen**	

if

I should fall	
thou shouldst fall	
he should fall	
your honor should fall	
we should fall	
ye should fall	
they should fall	
your honors should fall	

or fell.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

cae	fall (thou)	**no caigas**	fall (thou) not
caed	fall (ye)	**no caigáis**	fall (ye) not
caiga	let me fall	**no caiga**	let me not fall
caiga	let him fall	**no caiga**	let him not fall
caiga V.	fall, your honor	**no caiga** V.	fall not, your honor
caigamos	let us fall	**no caigamos**	let us not fall
caigan	let them fall	**no caigan**	let them not fall
caigan VV.	fall, your honors	**no caigan** VV.	fall not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMP INFINITIVE: **haber caído,** to have fallen.

COMP. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo caído,** having fallen.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he caído,** etc.	I have fallen, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había caído,** etc.	I had fallen, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube caído,** etc.	(when) I had fallen, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré caído,** etc.	I shall have fallen, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría caído,** etc.	I should have fallen, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya caído,** etc.	that I have *or* may have fallen, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera caído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had fallen, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese caído,** etc.	that I had *or* should have fallen, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere caído,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have fallen, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese caído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had fallen, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

decaer. recaer.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, First Conjugation

Past Definite Stem, **d**, followed by endings of second or third conjugation, *and not the first conjugation* *

196. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **DAR** = TO GIVE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **dar**, to give. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **dando**, giving. PAST PARTICIPLE: **dado**, given

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	d*oy*	I give (do give, am giving)
	das	thou givest
	da	he gives
V.	**da**	your honor gives
	damos	we give
	dais	ye give
	dan	they give
VV.	**dan**	your honors give

Imperfect

	daba	I was giving	*or* used to give.
	dabas	thou wast giving	
	daba	he was giving	
V.	**daba**	your honor was giving	
	dábamos	we were giving	
	dabais	ye were giving	
	daban	they were giving	
VV.	**daban**	your honors were giving	

Past Definite

	d*í*	I gave
	d*i*ste	thou didst give
	d*ió*	he gave
V.	**d*ió***	your honor gave
	d*i*mos	we gave
	d*i*steis	ye gave
	d*ie*ron	they gave
VV.	**d*ie*ron**	your honors gave

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	dé	that I give	*or* may give, etc.
	des	that thou give	
	dé	that he give	
V.	**dé**	that your honor give	
	demos	that we give	
	deis	that ye give	
	den	that they give	
VV.	**den**	that your honors give	

Imperfect (First Form)

	d*ie*ra	that I should give	*or* gave.
	d*ie*ras	that thou shouldst give	
	d*ie*ra	that he should give	
V.	**d*ie*ra**	that your honor should give	
	d*ié*ramos	that we should give	
	d*ie*rais	that ye should give	
	d*ie*ran	that they should give	
VV.	**d*ie*ran**	that your honors should give	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	d*ie*se	that I gave	*or* should give, etc.
	d*ie*ses	that thou gave	
	d*ie*se	that he gave	
V.	**d*ie*se**	that your honor gave	
	d*ié*semos	that we gave	
	d*ie*seis	that ye gave	
	d*ie*sen	that they gave	
VV.	**d*ie*sen**	that your honors gave	

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

daré	I shall give
darás	thou wilt give
dará	he will give
V. **dará**	your honor will give
daremos	we shall give
daréis	ye will give
darán	they will give
VV. **darán**	your honors will give

Conditional (Consequent)

daría	I should give
darías	thou wouldst give
daría	he would give
V. **daría**	your honor would give
daríamos	we should give
daríais	ye would give
darían	they would give
VV. **darían**	your honors would give

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.: **dière**, **dieres**, **dière**, V. **dière**, **diéremos**, **diéreis**, **dieren**, VV. **dieren**

if, when, while, although, etc.: I give, thou give, he give, your honor give, we give, ye give, they give, your honors give — *or* shall give, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si: **diera** or **diese**; **dieras** or **dieses**; **diera** or **diese**; V. **diera** or V. **diese**; **diéramos** or **diésemos**; **dierais** or **dieseis**; **dieran** or **diesen**; VV. **dieran** or VV. **diesen**

if: I should give, thou shouldst give, he should give, your honor should give, we should give, ye should give, they should give, your honors should give — *or* gave.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

da	give (thou)	**no des**	give (thou) not
dad	give (ye)	**no deis**	give (ye) not
dé	let me give	**no dé**	let me not give
dé	let him give	**no dé**	let him not give
dé V.	give, your honor	**no dé** V.	give not, your honor
demos	let us give	**no demos**	let us not give
den	let them give	**no den**	let them not give
den VV.	give, your honors	**no den** VV.	give not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber dado,** to have given.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo dado,** having given.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he dado,** etc.	I have given, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había dado,** etc.	I had given, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube dado,** etc.	(when) I had given, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré dado,** etc.	I shall have given, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría dado,** etc.	I should have given, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya dado,** etc.	that I have *or* may have given, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera dado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had given, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese dado,** etc.	that I had *or* should have given, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere dado,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have given, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese dado,** etc.	that I should have *or* had given, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desdar.

One of four verbs that add **y** to the original **o** of first person singular present indicative; the others being **ser**, **estar** and **ir.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem very irregular: Present Indicative, **v**; Present Subjunctive, **vay**; Imperfect Indicative, **ib**. Past Definite Stem, **fu** *

197. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB IR = TO GO

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ir,** to go. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **yendo,** going. PAST PARTICIPLE: **ido,** gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	voy	I go (do go, am going)
	vas	thou goest
	va	he goes
V.	*va*	your honor goes
	*va***mos**	we go
	*va***is**	ye go
	*va***n**	they go
VV.	*va***n**	your honors go

Imperfect

	*ib***a**	I was going
	*ib***as**	thou wast going
	*ib***a**	he was going
V.	*ib***a**	your honor was going
	*ib***amos**	we were going
	*ib***ais**	ye were going
	*ib***an**	they were going
VV.	*ib***an**	your honors were going

or used to go.

Past Definite

	*fu***í**	I went
	*fu***iste**	thou didst go
	*fu***é**	he went
V.	*fu***é**	your honor went
	*fu***imos**	we went
	*fu***isteis**	ye went
	*fu***eron**	they went
VV.	*fu***eron**	your honors went

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	*vay***a**	that I go
	*vay***as**	that thou go
	*vay***a**	that he go
V.	*vay***a**	that your honor go
	*vay***amos**	that we go
	*vay***áis**	that ye go
	*vay***an**	that they go
VV.	*vay***an**	that your honors go

or may go, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	*fu***era**	that I should go
	*fu***eras**	that thou shouldst go
	*fu***era**	that he should go
V.	*fu***era**	that your honor should go
	*fu***éramos**	that we should go
	*fu***erais**	that ye should go
	*fu***eran**	that they should go
VV.	*fu***eran**	that your honors should go

or went.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	*fu***ese**	that I went
	*fu***eses**	that thou went
	*fu***ese**	that he went
V.	*fu***ese**	that your honor went
	*fu***ésemos**	that we went
	*fu***eseis**	that ye went
	*fu***esen**	that they went
VV.	*fu***esen**	that your honors went

or should go, etc.

* Where the irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	iré	I shall go
	irás	thou wilt go
	irá	he will go
V.	**irá**	your honor will go
	iremos	we shall go
	iréis	ye will go
	irán	they will go
VV.	**irán**	your honors will go

Conditional (*Consequent*)

	iría	I should go
	irías	thou wouldst go
	iría	he would go
V.	**iría**	your honor would go
	iríamos	we should go
	iríais	ye would go
	irían	they would go
VV.	**irían**	your honors would go

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	*fu*ere	
	*fu*eres	
	*fu*ere	
V.	*fu*ere	
	*fu*éremos	
	*fu*ereis	
	*fu*eren	
VV.	*fu*eren	

if, when, while, although, etc.

	I go	
	thou go	
	he go	
	your honor go	
	we go	
	ye go	
	they go	
	your honors go	

or shall go, etc.

Conditional (*Antecedent*)

si

	*fu*era	or	*fu*ese	
	*fu*eras	or	*fu*eses	
	*fu*era	or	*fu*ese	
V.	*fu*era	or	V. *fu*ese	
	*fu*éramos	or	*fu*ésemos	
	*fu*erais	or	*fu*eseis	
	*fu*eran	or	*fu*esen	
VV.	*fu*eran	or	VV. *fu*esen	

if

I should go	
thou shouldst go	
he should go	
your honor should go	
we should go	
ye should go	
they should go	
your honors should go	

or went.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

ve	go (thou)	**no** *vay***as**	go (thou) not
id	go (ye)	**no** *vay***áis**	go (ye) not
*vay***a**	let me go	**no** *vay***a**	let me not go
*vay***a**	let him go	**no** *vay***a**	let him not go
*vay***a** V.	go, your honor	**no** *vay***a** V.	go not, your honor
*va***mos**	let us go	**no** *va***mos**	let us not go
*vay***an**	let them go	**no** *vay***an**	let them not go
*vay***an** VV.	go, your honors	**no** *vay***an** VV.	go not, your honors

Imperative second person singular, instead of being **va,** is **ve.** Imperative first person plural, instead of being **vayamos,** is abbreviated to **vamos**.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber ido,** to have gone.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo ido,** having gone.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he ido,** etc.	I have gone, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había ido,** etc.	I had gone, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube ido,** etc.	(when) I had gone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré ido,** etc.	I shall have gone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría ido,** etc.	I should have gone, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya ido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have gone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera ido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese ido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have gone, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere ido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have gone, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese, ido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone, etc.

This verb is one of four that add **y** to the original **o** in the first person singular of the present indicative; the other three being **ser, estar** and **dar.** It is also one of three that are irregular in the imperfect indicative the two others being **ver** and **ser.** Note the similarity in the past definite stem with **ser,** to be.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem very irregular: Present Indicative, **v**; Present Subjunctive, **vay**; Imperfect Indicative, **ib**. Past Definite Stem **fu** *

198. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **IRSE** = TO GO AWAY.

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **irsé**, to go away. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **yéndose**, going away. PAST PARTICIPLE: **ido**, gone away.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	me *voy*	I go away (do go away, am going away)
	te *vas*	thou goest away
	se *va*	he goes away
V.	**se** *va*	your honor goes away
	nos *va***mos**	we go away
	os *va***is**	ye go away
	se *va***n**	they go away
VV.	**se** *va***n**	your honors go away

Imperfect

	me *ib***a**	I was going away
	te *ib***as**	thou wast going away
	se *ib***a**	he was going away
V.	**se** *ib***a**	your honor was going away
	nos *ib***amos**	we were going away
	os *ib***ais**	ye were going away
	se *ib***an**	they were going away
VV.	**se** *ib***an**	your honors were going away

or used to go away.

Past Definite

	me *fuí*	I went away
	te *fu***iste**	thou didst go away
	se *fué*	he went away
V.	**se** *fué*	your honor went away
	nos *fu***imos**	we went away
	os *fu***isteis**	ye went away
	se *fu***eron**	they went away
VV.	**se** *fu***eron**	your honors went away

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	me *vay***a**	that I go away
	te *vay***as**	that thou go away
	se *vay***a**	that he go away
V.	**se** *vay***a**	that your honor go away
	nos *vay***amos**	that we go away
	os *vay***áis**	that ye go away
	se *vay***an**	that they go away
VV.	**se** *vay***an**	that your honors go away

or may go away, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	me *fu***era**	that I should go away
	te *fu***eras**	that thou shouldst go away
	se *fu***era**	that he should go away
V.	**se** *fu***era**	that your honor should go away
	nos *fu***éramos**	that we should go away
	os *fu***erais**	that ye should go away
	se *fu***eran**	that they should go away
VV.	**se** *fu***eran**	that your honors should go away

or went away

Imperfect (Second Form)

	me *fu***ese**	that I went away
	te *fu***eses**	that thou went away
	se *fu***ese**	that he went away
V.	**se** *fu***ese**	that your honor went away
	nos *fu***ésemos**	that we went away
	os *fu***eseis**	that ye went away
	se *fu***esen**	that they went away
VV.	**se** *fu***esen**	that your honors went away

or should go away, etc.

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	me iré	I shall go away
	te irás	thou wilt go away
	se irá	he will go away
V.	**se irá**	your honor will go away
	nos iremos	we shall go away
	os iréis	ye will go away
	se irán	they will go away
VV.	**se irán**	your honors will go away

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**me** *fuere*		if, when, while, although, etc.	I go away	*or* shall go away, etc.
	te *fueres*			thou go away	
	se *fuere*			he go away	
	V. **se** *fuere*			your honor go away	
	nos *fuéremos*			we go away	
	os *fuereis*			ye go away	
	se *fueren*			they go away	
	VV. **se** *fueren*			your honors go away	

Conditional (*Consequent*)

	me iría	I should go away
	te irías	thou wouldst go away
	se iría	he would go away
V.	**se iría**	your honor would go away
	nos iríamos	we should go away
	os iríais	ye would go away
	se irían	they would go away
VV.	**se irían**	your honors would go away

Conditional (*Antecedent*)

si	**me** *fuera*	or	**me** *fuese*	if	I should go away	*or* went away.
	te *fueras*	or	**te** *fueses*		thou wouldst go away	
	se *fuera*	or	**se** *fuese*		he would go away	
	V. **se** *fuera*	or V.	**se** *fuese*		your honor would go away	
	nos *fuéramos*	or	**nos** *fuésemos*		we should go away	
	os *fuerais*	or	**os** *fueseis*		ye would go away	
	se *fueran*	or	**se** *fuesen*		they would go away	
	VV. **se** *fueran*	or VV.	**se** *fuesen*		your honors would go away	

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

***ve*te**	go (thou) away	**no te** *vayas*	go (thou) not away
idos	go (ye) away	**no os** *vayáis*	go (ye) not away
***váy*ame**	let me go away	**no me** *vaya*	let me not go away
***váy*ase**	let him go away	**no se** *vaya*	let him not go away
***váy*ase V.**	go away, your honor	**no se** *vaya* V.	go not away, your honor
***vá*monos**	let us go away	**no nos** *va*mos	let us not go away
***váy*anse**	let them go away	**no se** *vayan*	let them not go away
***váy*anse VV.**	go away, your honors	**no se** *vayan* VV.	go not away, your honors

Imperative first person plural, instead of being **vayámonos**, is abbreviated to **vámonos.** Imperative second person plural affirmative, see paragraph 2, § 120.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haberse ido,** to have gone away.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiéndose ido,** having gone away.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me he ido,** etc.	I have gone away, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**me había ido,** etc.	I had gone away, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**me hube ido,** etc.	(when) I had gone away, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me habré ido,** etc.	I shall have gone away, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me habría ido,** etc.	I should have gone away, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**me haya ido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have gone away, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**me hubiera ido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone away, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**me hubiese ido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have gone away, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**me hubiere ido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have gone away, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**me hubiera** or **me hubiese ido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone away, etc.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **oig**, before **a** or **o**; **oy** when tonic and followed by **e***

199. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **OÍR** = TO HEAR

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **oír**, to hear. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **oyendo**, hearing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **oído**, heard.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	o*ig*o	I hear (do hear, am hearing)
	o*y*es	thou hearest
	o*y*e	he hears
V.	**o*y*e**	your honor hears
	oímos	we hear
	oís	ye hear
	o*y*en	they hear
VV.	**o*y*en**	your honors hear

Imperfect

	oía	I was hearing	*or* used to hear.
	oías	thou wast hearing	
	oía	he was hearing	
V.	**oía**	your honor was hearing	
	oíamos	we were hearing	
	oíais	ye were hearing	
	oían	they were hearing	
VV.	**oían**	your honors were hearing	

Past Definite

	oí	I heard
	oíste	thou didst hear
	oyó	he heard
V.	**oyó**	your honor heard
	oímos	we heard
	oísteis	ye heard
	oyeron	they heard
VV.	**oyeron**	your honors heard

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	o*ig*a	that I hear	*or* may hear, etc.
	o*ig*as	that thou hear	
	o*ig*a	that he hear	
V.	**o*ig*a**	that your honor hear	
	o*ig*amos	that we hear	
	o*ig*áis	that ye hear	
	o*ig*an	that they hear	
VV.	**o*ig*an**	that your honors hear	

Imperfect (First Form)

	oyera	that I should hear	*or* heard
	oyeras	that thou shouldst hear	
	oyera	that he should hear	
V.	**oyera**	that your honor should hear	
	oyéramos	that we should hear	
	oyerais	that ye should hear	
	oyeran	that they should hear	
VV.	**oyeran**	that your honors should hear	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	oyese	that I heard	*or* should hear, etc.
	oyeses	that thou heard	
	oyese	that he heard	
V.	**oyese**	that your honor heard	
	oyésemos	that we heard	
	oyeseis	that ye heard	
	oyesen	that they heard	
VV.	**oyesen**	that your honors heard	

* Where the irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic. NOTE. — Past Definite stem changes **i** to **y**, in diphthongs **ie**, **ió**; see *creer*, p. 68.

Future

oiré	I shall hear
oirás	thou wilt hear
oirá	he will hear
V. **oirá**	your honors will hear
oiremos	we shall hear
oiréis	ye will hear
oirán	they will hear
VV. **oirán**	your honors will hear

Conditional (Consequent)

oiría	I should hear
oirías	thou wouldst hear
oiría	he would hear
V. **oiría**	your honor would hear
oiríamos	we should hear
oiríais	ye would hear
oirían	they would hear
VV. **oirían**	your honors would hear

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	oyere		I hear
	oyeres		thou hear
	oyere		he hear
V.	**oyere**		your honor hear
	oyéremos		we hear
	oyereis		ye hear
	oyeren		they hear
VV.	**oyeren**		your honors hear

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall hear, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	oyera	or	**oyese**		I should hear
	oyeras	or	**oyeses**		thou shouldst hear
	oyera	or	**oyese**		he should hear
V.	**oyera**	or	V. **oyese**		your honor should hear
	oyéramos	or	**oyésemos**		we should hear
	oyerais	or	**oyeseis**		ye should hear
	oyeran	or	**oyesen**		they should hear
VV.	**oyeran**	or	VV. **oyesen**		your honors should hear

if

or heard.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

oye	hear (thou)	**no o*ig*as**	hear (thou) not
oíd	hear (ye)	**no o*ig*áis**	hear (ye) not
o*ig*a	let me hear	**no o*ig*a**	let me not hear
o*ig*a	let him hear	**no o*ig*a**	let him not hear
o*ig*a V.	hear, your honor	**no o*ig*a** V.	hear not, your honor
o*ig*amos	let us hear	**no o*ig*amos**	let us not hear
o*ig*an	let them hear	**no o*ig*an**	let them not hear
o*ig*an VV.	hear, your honors	**no o*ig*an** VV.	hear not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber oído,** to have heard.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo oído,** having heard.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he oído,** etc.	I have heard, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había oído,** etc.	I had heard, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube oído,** etc.	(when) I had heard, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré oído,** etc.	I shall have heard, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría oído,** etc.	I should have heard, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya oído,** etc.	that I have *or* may have heard, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera oído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had heard, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiera oído,** etc.	that I had *or* should have heard, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere oído,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have heard, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese oído,** etc.	that I should have *or* had heard, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

desoír. **entreoír.** **trasoír.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Third Conjugation

Present Stem, **salg** before **o** or **a**. Future Stem, **saldr** *

200. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **SALIR** = TO GO OR COME OUT

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **salir,** to go out. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **saliendo,** going out. PAST PARTICIPLE: **salido,** gone out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	sal*g*o	I go out (do go out, am going out)
	sales	thou goest out
	sale	he goes out
V.	**sale**	your honor goes out
	salimos	we go out
	salís	ye go out
	salen	they go out
VV.	**salen**	your honors go out

Imperfect

	salía	I was going out	*or* used to go out.
	salías	thou wast going out	
	salía	he was going out	
V.	**salía**	your honor was going out	
	salíamos	we were going out	
	salíais	ye were going out	
	salían	they were going out	
VV.	**salían**	your honors were going out	

Past Definite

	salí	I went out
	saliste	thou didst go out
	salió	he went out
V.	**salió**	your honor went out
	salimos	we went out
	salisteis	ye went out
	salieron	they went out
VV.	**salieron**	your honors went out

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	sal*g*a	that I go out	*or* may go out, etc.
	sal*g*as	that thou go out	
	sal*g*a	that he go out	
V.	**sal*g*a**	that your honor go out	
	sal*g*amos	that we go out	
	sal*g*áis	that ye go out	
	sal*g*an	that they go out	
VV.	**sal*g*an**	that your honors go out	

Imperfect (First Form)

	saliera	that I should go out	*or* went out.
	salieras	that thou shouldst go out	
	saliera	that he should go out	
V.	**saliera**	that your honor should go out	
	saliéramos	that we should go out	
	salierais	that ye should go out	
	salieran	that they should go out	
VV.	**salieran**	that your honors should go out	

Imperfect (Second Form)

	saliese	that I went out	*or* should go out, etc.
	salieses	that thou went out	
	saliese	that he went out	
V.	**saliese**	that your honor went out	
	saliésemos	that we went out	
	salieseis	that ye went out	
	saliesen	that they went out	
VV.	**saliesen**	that your honors went out	

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	sal*d*ré	I shall go out
	sal*d*rás	thou wilt go out
	sal*d*rá	he will go out
V.	**sal*d*rá**	your honor will go out
	sal*d*remos	we shall go out
	sal*d*réis	ye will go out
	sal*d*rán	they will go out
VV.	**sal*d*rán**	your honors will go out

Conditional (Consequent)

	sal*d*ría	I should go out
	sal*d*rías	thou wouldst go out
	sal*d*ría	he would go out
V	**sal*d*ría**	your honor would go out
	sal*d*ríamos	we should go out
	sal*d*ríais	ye would go out
	sal*d*rían	they would go out
VV.	**sal*d*rían**	your honors would go out

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	saliere	I go out
	salieres	thou go out
	saliere	he go out
V.	**saliere**	your honor go out
	saliéremos	we go out
	saliereis	ye go out
	salieren	they go out
VV.	**salieren**	your honors go out

if, when, while although, etc.

or shall go out, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	saliera	or	**saliese**		I should go out
	salieras	or	**salieses**		thou shouldst go out
	saliera	or	**saliese**		he should go out
V.	**saliera**	or	V. **saliese**		your honor should go out
	saliéramos	or	**saliésemos**		we should go out
	salierais	or	**salieseis**		ye should go out
	salieran	or	**saliesen**		they should go out
VV.	**salieran**	or	VV. **saliesen**		your honors should go out

if

or went out.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

sal	go (thou) out	**no sal*g*as**	go (thou) not out
salid	go (ye) out	**no sal*g*áis**	go (ye) not out
sal*g*a	let me go out	**no sal*g*a**	let me not go out
sal*g*a	let him go out	**no sal*g*a**	et him not go out
sal*g*a V.	go out, your honor	**no sal*g*a** V.	go not out, your honor
sal*g*amos	let us go out	**no sal*g*amos**	let us not go out
sal*g*an	let them go out	**no sal*g*an**	let them not go out
sal*g*an VV.	go out, your honors	**no sal*g*an** VV.	go not out, your honors

Imperative, second person singular, instead of being **sale** is abbreviated to **sal.**

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber salido,** to have gone out.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo salido,** having gone out.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he salido,** etc.	I have gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había salido,** etc.	I had go out, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube salido,** etc.	(when) I had gone out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré salido,** etc.	I shall have gone out, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría salido,** etc.	I should have gone out, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya salido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera salido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone out, etc.
Comp. Imp (2d form)	**hubiese salido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have gone out, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere salido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have gone out, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese salido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had gone out, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

resalir. **sobresalir.**

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present stem, **valg** before **a** or **o**. Future stem, **valdr** *

201. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **VALER** — TO BE WORTH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **valer**, to be worth. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **valiendo**, being worth. PAST PARTICIPLE: **valido**, been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	valgo	I am worth
	vales	thou art worth
	vale	he is worth
V.	**vale**	your honor is worth
	valemos	we are worth
	valeis	ye are worth
	valen	they are worth
VV.	**valen**	your honors are worth

Imperfect

	valía	I was worth
	valías	thou wast worth
	valía	he was worth
V.	**valía**	your honor was worth
	valíamos	we were worth
	valíais	ye were worth
	valían	they were worth
VV.	**valían**	your honors were worth

or used to be worth.

Past Definite

	valí	I was worth
	valiste	thou wast worth
	valió	he was worth
V.	**valió**	your honor was worth
	valimos	we were worth
	valisteis	ye were worth
	valieron	they were worth
VV.	**valieron**	your honors were worth

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	valga	that I be worth
	valgas	that thou be worth
	valga	that he be worth
V.	**valga**	that your honor be worth
	valgamos	that we be worth
	valgáis	that ye be worth
	valgan	that they be worth
VV.	**valgan**	that your honors be worth

or may be worth, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	valiera	that I should be worth
	valieras	that thou shouldst be worth
	valiera	that he should be worth
V.	**valiera**	that your honor should be worth
	valiéramos	that we should be worth
	valierais	that ye should be worth
	valieran	that they should be worth
VV.	**valieran**	that your honors should be worth

or were worth.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	valiese	that I were worth
	valieses	that thou were worth
	valiese	that he were worth
V.	**valiese**	that your honor were worth
	valiésemos	that we were worth
	valieseis	that ye were worth
	valiesen	that they were worth
VV.	**valiesen**	that your honors were worth

or should be worth, etc.

* Where these irregularities occur, the letters are printed in italic.

Future

	val*d*ré	I shall be worth
	val*d*rás	thou wilt be worth
	val*d*rá	he will be worth
V.	**val*d*rá**	your honor will be worth
	val*d*remos	we shall be worth
	val*d*réis	ye will be worth
	val*d*rán	they will be worth
VV.	**val*d*rán**	your honors will be worth

Conditional (Consequent)

	val*d*ría	I should be worth
	val*d*rías	thou wouldst be worth
	val*d*ría	he would be worth
V.	**val*d*ría**	your honor would be worth
	val*d*ríamos	we should be worth
	val*d*ríais	ye would be worth
	val*d*rían	they would be worth
VV.	**val*d*rían**	your honors would be worth

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.:

	valiere	I be worth
	valieres	thou be worth
	valiere	he be worth
V.	**valiere**	your honor be worth
	valieremos	we be worth
	valiereis	ye be worth
	valieren	they be worth
VV.	**valieren**	your honors be worth

if, when, while, although, etc.: *or* shall be worth, etc

Conditional (Antecedent)

si:

	valiera	or	**valiese**
	valieras	or	**valieses**
	valiera	or	**valiese**
V.	**valiera**	or V.	**valiese**
	valieramos	or	**valiesemos**
	valierais	or	**valieseis**
	valieran	or	**valiesen**
VV.	**valieran**	or VV.	**valiesen**

if:

I should be worth
thou shouldst be worth
he should be worth
your honor should be worth
we should be worth
ye should be worth
they should be worth
your honors should be worth

or were worth.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, AFFIRMATIVE AND NEGATIVE

vale or *val*	be (thou) worth	**no valgas**	be (thou) not worth
valed	be (ye) worth	**no valgáis**	be (ye) not worth
valga	let me be worth	**no valga**	let me not be worth
valga	let him be worth	**no valga**	let him not be worth
valga V.	be worth, your honor	**no valga** V.	be not worth, your honor
valgamos	let us be worth	**no valgamos**	let us not be worth
valgan	let them be worth	**no valgan**	let them not be worth
valgan VV.	be worth, your honors	**no valgan** VV.	be not worth, your honors

Imperative second person singular affirmative is either the regular form, **vale**, or the abbreviated form, **val**; neither form is used, as a rule, without the pronouns **me, te, nos**; e. g. **valme** or **váleme**; **valte** or **válete**; **valnos** or **válenos.**

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber valido,** to have been worth.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo valido,** having been worth.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he valido,** etc.	I have been worth, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había valido,** etc.	I had been worth, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube valido,** etc.	(when) I had been worth, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré valido,** etc.	I shall have been worth, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría valido,** etc.	I should have been worth, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya valido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have been worth, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera valido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been worth, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese valido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have been worth, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere valido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have been worth, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese valido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had been worth, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

equivaler. prevaler.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **ve** before **a, o, í**; otherwise **v** *

202. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **VER** = TO SEE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **ver**, to see. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **viendo**, seeing. PAST PARTICIPLE: *visto*, seen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

Present

	ve*o*	I see (do see, am seeing)
	ve*s*	thou seest
	ve	he sees
V.	**ve**	your honor sees
	ve*m*os	we see
	ve*í*s	ye see
	ve*n*	they see
VV.	**ve*n***	your honor sees

Imperfect

	ve*í*a	I was seeing
	ve*í*as	thou wast seeing
	ve*í*a	he was seeing
V.	**ve*í*a**	your honor was seeing
	ve*í*amos	we were seeing
	ve*í*ais	ye were seeing
	ve*í*an	they were seeing
VV.	**ve*í*an**	your honors were seeing

or used to see.

Past Definite

	v*í*	I saw
	v*i*ste	thou didst see
	v*i*ó	he saw
V.	**v*i*ó**	your honor saw
	v*i*mos	we saw
	v*i*steis	ye saw
	v*i*eron	they saw
VV.	**v*i*eron**	your honors saw

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	ve*a*	that I see
	ve*a*s	that thou see
	ve*a*	that he see
V.	**ve*a***	that your honor see
	ve*a*mos	that we see
	ve*á*is	that ye see
	ve*a*n	that they see
VV.	**ve*a*n**	that your honors see

or may see, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	vie*r*a	that I should see
	vie*r*as	that thou shouldst see
	vie*r*a	that he should see
V.	**vie*r*a**	that your honor should see
	vié*r*amos	that we should see
	vie*r*ais	that ye should see
	vie*r*an	that they should see
VV.	**vie*r*an**	that your honors should see

or saw.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	vie*s*e	that I saw
	vie*s*es	that thou saw
	vie*s*e	that he saw
V.	**vie*s*e**	that your honor saw
	vié*s*emos	that we saw
	vie*s*eis	that ye saw
	vie*s*en	that they saw
VV.	**vie*s*en**	that your honors saw

or should see, etc.

* Where the changes occur the letters are printed in italic. The old form of the verb was **veer.**

Note the irregular past participle *visto*. This verb is one of three that are irregular in the imperfect indicative; the two others being **ser** and **ir**. The imperfect indicative forms, **vía, vías, vía,** etc., are met with in poetry.

Future

	veré	I shall see
	verás	thou wilt see
	verá	he will see
V.	**verá**	your honor will see
	veremos	we shall see
	veréis	ye will see
	verán	they will see
VV.	**verán**	your honors will see

Conditional (Consequent)

	vería	I should see
	verías	thou wouldst see
	vería	he would see
V.	**vería**	your honor would see
	veríamos	we should see
	veríais	ye would see
	verían	they would see
VV.	**verían**	your honors would see

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	viere	I see
	vieres	thou see
	viere	he see
V.	**viere**	your honor see
	viéremos	we see
	viereis	ye see
	vieren	they see
VV.	**vieren**	your honors see

if, when, while, although, etc.

or shall see, etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	viera	or		**viese**	I should see
	vieras	or		**vieses**	thou shouldst see
	viera	or		**viese**	he should see
V.	**viera**	or	V.	**viese**	your honor should see
	viéramos	or		**viésemos**	we should see
	vierais	or		**vieseis**	ye should see
	vieran	or		**viesen**	they should see
VV.	**vieran**	or	VV.	**viesen**	your honors should see

if

or saw.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

ve	see (thou)	**no veas**	see (thou) not
ved	see (ye)	**no veáis**	see (ye) not
vea	let me see	**no vea**	let me not see
vea	let him see	**no vea**	let him not see
vea V.	see, your honor	**no vea** V.	see not, your honor
veamos	let us see	**no veamos**	let us not see
vean	let them see	**no vean**	let them not see
vean VV.	see, your honors	**no vean** VV.	see not, your honors

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber** *visto*, to have seen.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo** *visto*, having seen.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he** *visto*, etc.	I have seen, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había** *visto*, etc.	I had seen, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube** *visto*, etc.	(when) I had seen, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré** *visto*, etc.	I shall have seen, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría** *visto*, etc.	I should have seen, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya** *visto*, etc.	that I have *or* may have seen, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera** *visto*, etc.	that I should have *or* had seen, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese** *visto*, etc.	that I had *or* should have seen, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere** *visto*, etc.	that I have *or* shall have seen, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese** *visto*, etc.	that I should have *or* had seen, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner: **antever, entrever, prever, rever**; and since, in these compounds, **ver** is the true stem, they must be written, **anteveo, antevés, antevé,** V. **antevé, antevemos, antevéis, antevén,** VV. **antevén**; and similarly for the other compounds, because necessary to preserve the tonic accent of the true stem.

IRREGULAR VERBS — Seventh Class, Second Conjugation

Present Stem, **yazc, yazg, yag,** before **a** or **o***

203. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **YACER** = TO REST, TO LIE

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **yacer,** to lie. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **yaciendo,** lying. PAST PARTICIPLE: **yacido,** lain.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

	ya*z*co, ya*z*g*o*, ya*g*o	I lie (do lie, am lying)
	yaces	thou liest
	yace	he lies
V.	**yace**	your honor lies
	yacemos	we lie
	yacéis	ye lie
	yacen	they lie
VV.	**yacen**	your honors lie

Imperfect

	yacía	I was lying
	yacías	thou wast lying
	yacía	he was lying
V.	**yacía**	your honor was lying
	yacíamos	we were lying
	yacíais	ye were lying
	yacían	they were lying
VV.	**yacían**	your honors were lying

or used to lie, etc.

Past Definite

	yací	I lay
	yaciste	thou didst lie
	yació	he lay
V.	**yació**	your honor lay
	yacimos	we lay
	yacisteis	ye lay
	yacieron	they lay
VV.	**yacieron**	your honors lay

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

	ya*z*ca		**ya*z*ga**		**ya*g*a**	that I lie
	ya*z*cas		**ya*z*gas**		**ya*g*as**	that thou lie
	ya*z*ca		**ya*z*ga**		**ya*g*a**	that he lie
V.	**ya*z*cá**	V.	**ya*z*ga**	V.	**ya*g*a**	that your honor lie
	ya*z*camos		**ya*z*gamos**		**ya*g*amos**	that we lie
	ya*z*cáis		**ya*z*gáis**		**ya*g*áis**	that ye lie
	ya*z*can		**ya*z*gan**		**ya*g*an**	that they lie
VV.	**ya*z*can**	VV.	**ya*z*gan**	VV.	**ya*g*an**	that your honors lie

or may lie, etc.

Imperfect (First Form)

	yaciera	that I should lie
	yacieras	that thou shouldst lie
	yaciera	that he should lie
V.	**yaciera**	that your honor should lie
	yaciéramos	that we should lie
	yacierais	that ye should lie
	yacieran	that they should lie
VV.	**yacieran**	that your honors should lie

or lay.

Imperfect (Second Form)

	yaciese	that I lay
	yacieses	that thou lay
	yaciese	that he lay
V.	**yaciese**	that your honor lay
	yaciésemos	that we lay
	yacieseis	that ye lay
	yaciesen	that they lay
VV.	**yaciesen**	that your honors lay

or should lie, etc.

* Where these irregularities occur the letters are printed in italic.

Future

yaceré	I shall lie
yacerás	thou wilt lie
yacerá	he will lie
V. **yacerá**	your honor will lie
yaceremos	we shall lie
yaceréis	ye will lie
yacerán	they will lie
VV. **yacerán**	your honors will lie

Conditional (Consequent)

yacería	I should lie
yacerías	thou wouldst lie
yacería	he would lie
V. **yacería**	your honor would lie
yaceríamos	we should lie
yaceríais	ye would lie
yacerían	they would lie
VV. **yacerían**	your honors would lie

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.

	yaciere	if, when, while, although, etc.	I lie
	yacieres		thou lie
	yaciere		he lie
V.	**yaciere**		your honor lie
	yaciéremos		we lie
	yaciereis		ye lie
	yacieren		they lie
VV.	**yacieren**		your honors lie

or **sh ll lie,** etc.

Conditional (Antecedent)

si

	yaciera	or	**yaciese**	if	I should lie
	yacieras	or	**yacieses**		thou shouldst lie
	yaciera	or	**yaciese**		he should lie
V.	**yaciera**	or	V. **yaciese**		your honor should lie
	yaciéramos	or	**yaciésemos**		we should lie
	yacierais	or	**yacieseis**		ye should lie
	yacieran	or	**yaciesen**		they should lie
VV.	**yacieran**	or	VV. **yaciesen**		your honors should lie

or **lay.**

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

yace or **yaz**	lie (thou)	**no yazcas, yazgas, yagas**	lie (thou) not
yaced	lie (ye)	**no yazcáis, yazgáis, yagáis**	lie (ye) not
yazca, etc.	let me lie	**no yazca,** etc.	let me not lie
yazca, etc.	let him lie	**no yazca,** etc.	let him not lie
yazca V., etc.	lie, your honor	**no yazca** V., etc.	lie not, your honor
yazcamos, etc.	let us lie	**no yazcamos,** etc.	let us not lie
yazcan, etc.	let them lie	**no yazcan,** etc.	let them not lie
yazcan VV., etc.	lie, your honors	**no yazcan** VV., etc.	lie not, your honors

Imperative second person singular is either **yace** or the abbreviated form **yaz.**

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber yacido,** to have lain.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo yacido,** having lain.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he yacido,** etc.	I have lain, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había yacido,** etc.	I had lain, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube yacido,** etc.	(when) I had lain, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré yacido,** etc.	I shall have lain, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría yacido,** etc.	I should have lain, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya yacido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have lain, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera yacido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had lain, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese yacido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have lain, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere yacido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have lain, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese yacido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had lain, etc.

Yacer, *to lie,* is now rarely used except in epitaphs, for which only the third persons singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative are required: **aquí yace** or **yacen,** here lies; **aquí yacía** or **yacían,** here lay.

204. TABLE OF THE CLASSES OF IRREGULAR VERBS

FIRST CLASS

		MODEL			
156 verbs in	**ar**	**Pensar**	Stem-vowel,	**e = ie**	when the stem is tonic, viz., in: Present indicative, first, second and third persons singular; third person plural. Present subjunctive, first, second and third persons singular; third person plural. Imperative, second person singular *and* the forms derived from present subjunctive.
27 " "	**er**	**Perder**	" "	**e = ie**	
126 " "	**ar**	**Sonar**	" "	**o = ue**	
31 " "	**er**	**Mover**	" "	**o = ue**	
1 " "	**ir**	**Discernir**	" "	**e = ie**	

SECOND CLASS

43 verbs in	**ir**	**Sentir**	Stem-vowel,	**e = ie**	when the stem is tonic, viz., in: The above-mentioned places in first class.
7 " "	**ir**	**Morir**	" "	**o = ue**	
		Sentir	Stem-vowel,	**e = i**	when the stem is atonic and is followed by *a, ie, ió*, viz., in: Present subjunctive first and second persons plural. Past definite third person singular and plural. Imperative first person plural. Imperfect subjunctives. Present participle. Future subjunctive.
		Morir	" "	**o = u**	

THIRD CLASS

54 verbs in **ir** ..... **Servir** ..... Stem-vowel, **e = i**, when the stem is tonic, viz., in the above-mentioned places in first class.
Servir ..... " " **e = i**, when the stem is atonic and is followed by *a, ie, ió*, viz., in the corresponding part of the second class.

FOURTH CLASS

203 verbs in **acer, ecer, ocer** .. **Conocer** .... } insert *z* before *c* followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in: Present indicative first person singular. Present subjunctive throughout. Imperative forms derived from present subjunctive.
7 " " **ucir** ..... **Lucir** .....

FIFTH CLASS

38 verbs in **uir**, *both vowels sounded* ..... **Atribuir** ... **Argüir** ..... } insert *y* before endings when the stem is tonic, or when the stem is followed by *a* or *o*, viz., in: Present indicative, *except* first and second persons plural. Present subjunctive throughout. Imperative, *except* second person plural.

Atribuir ... **Argüir** ..... } undergo orthographic change of *i* to *y* in the diphthongal endings *ie, ió* (see *Creer*, p. 68), viz., in: Present participle. Past definite third person singular and plural. Imperfect subjunctives. Future subjunctive.

SIXTH CLASS

104 verbs in **ar, er, ir**, with irregular past definite stems, tonic accent on the *stem* in past definite tense, first and third persons singular, instead of on the *ending*, as in other verbs; present and future stems generally irregular.

SEVENTH CLASS

26 verbs in **ar, er, ir** not reducible to the other six classes.

DEFECTIVE VERBS

205. Defective verbs are those which are wanting in some of the persons or tenses. This defect may be due to various reasons, principally, however, to the fact that their meaning forbids their use in certain tenses or persons, or that their structure renders their conjugation difficult or harsh to the Spanish ear.

1. Where defective on account of form, a verb in one language will not be found to be correspondingly defective in another; and in the same language usually other verbs will be found to supply the missing parts. Thus *can* and *must* are defective in English, but not in French and Spanish, where the corresponding verbs are *pouvoir* and *devoir* in French, and *poder* and *deber* in Spanish; and in English, to supply the missing parts of *can*, we employ "to be able," and for the missing parts of *must* we use "to be obliged to." So in Spanish *garantir* will be found defective and the missing parts supplied by *garantizar*. (See p. 197.) Sometimes verbs are defective through an inexplicable regard for euphony; *loo* and *roo* (from *loar* and *roer*) are avoided, but there is no hesitation about using the nouns *moho*, *azamboo*.

2. When defective on account of meaning, a verb will invariably be found correspondingly defective in all languages; for, if one cannot say, ordinarily, "I am born," "I graze," "I bark," etc., in English, neither is it possible in French or Spanish; and as it may be possible in narration in English to say "I am born," or in fables, "I graze," "I bark," so it is possible in other languages.

Impersonal verbs are not considered defective, because their literal meaning prevents their employment other than in the third person singular.

There are ten verbs of the third conjugation that are used only in the future indicative, or when the inflectional endings consist of or begin with *i*. The conjugation of one of them, *abolir*, will serve as a model for the other nine.

206. CONJUGATION OF THE VERB **ABOLIR*** = TO ABOLISH

SIMPLE TENSES

INFINITIVE: **abolir,** to abolish. PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **aboliendo,** abolishing. PAST PARTICIPLE: **abolido,** abolished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Present

abolimos	we abolish
abolís	ye abolish

Imperfect

abolía	I was abolishing	*or* used to abolish.
abolías	thou wast abolishing	
abolía	he was abolishing	
V. **abolía**	your honor was abolishing	
abolíamos	we were abolishing	
abolíais	ye were abolishing	
abolían	they were abolishing	
VV. **abolían**	your honors were abolishing	

Past Definite

abolí	I abolished
aboliste	thou didst abolish
abolió	he abolished
V. **abolió**	your honor abolished
abolimos	we abolished
abolisteis	ye abolished
abolieron	they abolished
VV. **abolieron**	your honors abolished

Future

aboliré	I shall abolish
abolirás	thou wilt abolish
abolirá	he will abolish
V. **abolirá**	your honor will abolish
aboliremos	we shall abolish
aboliréis	ye will abolish
abolirán	they will abolish
VV. **abolirán**	your honors will abolish

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present

Imperfect (First Form)

aboliera	that I should abolish	*or* abolished.
abolieras	that thou shouldst abolish	
aboliera	that he should abolish	
V. **aboliera**	that your honor should abolish	
aboliéramos	that we should abolish	
abolierais	that ye should abolish	
abolieran	that they should abolish	
VV. **abolieran**	that your honors should abolish	

Imperfect (Second Form)

aboliese	that I abolished	*or* should abolish, etc.
abolieses	that thou abolished	
aboliese	that he abolished	
V. **aboliese**	that your honor abolished	
aboliésemos	that we abolished	
abolieseis	that ye abolished	
aboliesen	that they abolished	
VV. **aboliesen**	that your honors abolished	

Future

si, cuando, mientras, aunque, etc.	**aboliere**	if, when, while, although, etc. I abolish	*or* shall abolish, etc.
	abolieres	thou abolish	
	aboliere	he abolish	
	V. **aboliere**	your honor abolish	
	aboliéremos	we abolish	
	abolieres	ye abolish	
	abolieren	they abolish	
	VV. **abolieren**	your honors abolish	

Conditional (Consequent)

	aboliría	I should abolish
	abolirías	thou wouldst abolish
	aboliría	he would abolish
V.	**aboliría**	your honor would abolish
	aboliríamos	we should abolish
	aboliríais	ye would abolish
	abolirían	they would abolish
VV.	**abolirían**	your honors would abolish

Conditional (Antecedent)

si		**aboliera**	or	**aboliese**	if	I should abolish
		abolieras	or	**abolieses**		thou shouldst abolish
		aboliera	or	**aboliese**		he should abolish
	V.	**aboliera**	or	V. **aboliese**		your honor should abolish
		aboliéramos	or	**aboliésemos**		we should abolish
		abolierais	or	**abolieseis**		ye should abolish
		abolieran	or	**aboliesen**		they should abolish
	VV.	**abolieran**	or	VV. **aboliesen**		your honors should abolish

} *or* abolished.

IMPERATIVE MOOD, Affirmative and Negative

abolid abolish (ye) **no abolid** abolish (ye) not

*The only forms in use are the future and those in which the inflectional endings begin with **i**, as shown above.

COMPOUND TENSES

COMPOUND INFINITIVE: **haber abolido,** to have abolished.

COMPOUND PRESENT PARTICIPLE: **habiendo abolido,** having abolished.

INDICATIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**he abolido,** etc.	I have abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp.	**había abolido,** etc.	I had abolished, etc.
Comp. Past Def.	**hube abolido,** etc.	(when) I had abolished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**habré abolido,** etc.	I shall have abolished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**habría abolido,** etc.	I should have abolished, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Comp. Pres.	**haya abolido,** etc.	that I have *or* may have abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (1st form)	**hubiera abolido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had abolished, etc.
Comp. Imp. (2d form)	**hubiese abolido,** etc.	that I had *or* should have abolished, etc.
Comp. Fut.	**hubiere abolido,** etc.	that I have *or* shall have abolished, etc.
Comp. Cond.	**hubiera** or **hubiese abolido,** etc.	that I should have *or* had abolished, etc.

Conjugate in the same manner:

aguerrir (like *servir*).
arrecirse (like *servir*).
aterirse (like *servir*).
desmarrirse (regular).
despavorir (regular).
embaír (regular).
empedernir (like *servir*); **empedernecer** supplies missing forms.
garantir (regular); **garantizar** supplies missing forms.
manir (regular).

Aplacer, to please, is seldom used, except in the infinitive and in the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative:

Present indicative,	*aplace, aplacen.*
Imperfect indicative,	*aplacía, aplacían.*

Proverb: *Todo lo nuevo aplace.*

Atañer, to appertain, on account of its meaning can be employed only in the third persons. It is used principally in the infinitive and in the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative:

Present indicative,	*atañe, atañen.*
Imperfect indicative,	*atañía, atañían.*

Balbucir, to stammer, is not used in the persons and numbers where the irregular verbs of the fourth class take *z* before *c;* viz., when *c* is followed by *a* or *o* (see 159). This verb is, however, used more ordinarily with the termination *ear* — *balbucear.*

Concernir, to concern, on account of its meaning can be employed only in the present participle and in the third persons. It is seldom used, except as follows:

Present indicative,	*concierne, conciernen.*
Present subjunctive,	*concierna, conciernan.*
Imperfect indicative,	*concernía, concernían.*

Corroer, to corrode, has,

Present indicative,	*corroe, corroen.*
Present subjunctive,	*corroa, corroan.*

Nacer, to be born, on account of its meaning can hardly be used in the first person singular present indicative, nor in the second person singular of the imperative. Still, Álvarez de Cienfuegos writes: "Rosas, *naced,*" and the Spanish Academy says this is an expression that could just as well have been used in the singular.

Pacer, to graze, is not used in the persons and numbers where irregular verbs of the fourth class take *z* before *c;* viz., when *c* is followed by *a* or *o* (see § 159).

Placer, to please (impersonal verb), is seldom used except in exclamations, e. g., *plegue á Dios,* God Grant; *pluguiera á Dios,* would to God! Otherwise its place is usually taken by *querer, gustar, parecer,* to please. It is conjugated as follows, preference being given to the stem *plug:*

Placer, placiendo, placido.

Indicative Mood	*Subjunctive Mood*
Present, *place.*	Present, *plegue* (*plazca*).
Imperfect, *placía.*	Imp., 1st form, *pluguiera* (*placiera*).
Past definite, *plugo* (*plació*).	Imp., 2d form, *pluguiese* (*placiese*).
Future, *placeré.*	Future, *pluguiere* (*placiere*).
Conditional, *placería.*	Cond. *pluguiera* or *pluguiese* (*placiera* or *placiese*).

Imperative Mood

Plegue (*plega*)

The compounds of *placer: complacer*, to humor; *desplacer*, to displease, both active verbs, are conjugated throughout like the irregular verbs of the fourth class (see § 159).

Raer, to erase, is seldom used, its place being usually taken by *borrar* or *rayar*. *Raer* has the two stems *raig-* or *ray-* before a strong vowel; *raig-* is preferable. *Raer*, when it occurs, should therefore be conjugated like the irregular verb *caer*, p. 176.

Reponer, when meaning 'to reply,' is, with rare exceptions, used only in the past definite of the indicative.

Repuse, I replied.	*Repusimos*, we replied.
Repusiste, thou didst reply.	*Repusisteis*, ye replied.
Repuso, he replied.	*Repusieron*, they replied.
V. *Repuso*, your honor replied.	VV. *Repusieron*, your honors replied.

Roer, to gnaw, has the following forms, of which *roo*, *roa* are preferable:

Present Indicative	*Present Subjunctive*		
Roo, *Roigo*, *Royo*	roa	*roiga*	*roya*
roes	roas	*roigas*	*royas*
roe	roa	*roiga*	*roya*
V. roe	V. roa	V. *roiga*	V. *roya*
roemos	roamos	*roigamos*	*royamos*
roéis	roáis	*roigáis*	*royáis*
roen	roan	*roigan*	*royan*
VV. roen	VV. roan	VV. *roigan*	VV. *royan*

Soler, to be accustomed to, is used principally in the present and imperfect indicative; and also sometimes in the present subjunctive.

Present Indicative	*Imperfect Indicative*	*Present Subjunctive*
suelo	solía	*suela*
sueles	solías	*suelas*
suele	solía	*suela*
V. *suele*	V. solía	V. *suela*
solemos	solíamos	solamos
soléis	solíais	soláis
suelen	solían	*suelan*
VV. *suelen*	VV. solían	VV. *suelan*

Usucapir, to acquire by right of possession, is used only in the infinitive.

IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES

207. 1. Past participles that do not end in *ado* or *ido* are irregular.

2. The following regular verbs and their compounds have irregular past participles:

Abrir, to open	*abierto*
Cubrir, to cover	*cubierto*
Escribir,* to write	*escrito*
Imprimir, to print	*impreso*

3. The following irregular verbs and their compounds have irregular past participles:

Decir, to tell, to say	*dicho* (*bendecir*, *maldecir*, regular)
Hacer, to do, to make	*hecho*
Morir, to die	*muerto*
Poner, to put, to place	*puesto*
Solver, to loosen	*suelto*
Ver, to see	*visto*
Volver, to return	*vuelto*

4. There are a number of verbs that have two past participles, one regular, the other irregular. The regular participle is always used to form the compound tenses, except in the verbs *freír*, *prender*, *proveer*, *romper*, whose irregular

* *Inscribir* and *proscribir* also have *inscripto* and *proscripto*.

past participles, *frito*, *preso*, *provisto* and *roto*, may be used interchangeably with the regular forms to make the compound tenses; so that *ha freído* and *ha frito* are equally correct.

5. With the exception of the four above-mentioned verbs, the irregular past participles are used only as adjectives:

agua bendita; está bendita; but *ha sido bendecido.*

Verbs.	Regular Past Partic.	Irreg Past Partic.
Abstraer, *to abstract*	abstraído	abstracto
Afligir, *to afflict*	afligido	aflicto
Ahitar, *to surfeit*	ahitado	ahito
Atender, *to heed*	atendido	atento
Bendecir, *to bless*	bendecido	bendito
Bienquerer, *to esteem*	bienquerido	bienquisto
Circuncidar, *to circumcise*	circuncidado	circunciso
Compeler, *to compel*	compelido	compulso
Comprender, *to comprehend*	comprendido	comprenso
Comprimir, *to compress*	comprimido	compreso
Concluir, *to conclude*	concluido	concluso
Confesar, *to confess*	confesado	confeso
Confundir, *to confuse*	confundido	confuso
Consumir, *to consume*	consumido	consunto
Contundir, *to contuse*	contundido	contuso
Convencer, *to convince*	convencido	convicto
Convertir, *to convert*	convertido	converso
Corregir, *to correct*	corregido	correcto
Corromper, *to corrupt*	corrompido	corrupto
Despertar, *to awake*	despertado	despierto
Difundir, *to diffuse*	difundido	difuso
Dividir, *to divide*	dividido	diviso
Elegir, *to elect*	elegido	electo
Enjugar, *to wipe*	enjugado	enjuto
Excluir, *to exclude*	excluido	excluso
Eximir, *to exempt*	eximido	exento
Expeler, *to expel*	expelido	expulso
Expresar, *to express*	expresado	expreso
Extender, *to extend*	extendido	extenso
Extinguir, *to extinguish*	extinguido	extinto
Fijar, *to fix*	fijado	fijo

Verbs.	Regular Past Partic.	Irreg. Past Partic
Freír, *to fry*	freído	frito
Hartar, *to satiate*	hartado	harto
Incluir, *to include*	incluido	incluso
Incurrir, *to incur*	incurrido	incurso
Infundir, *to infuse*	infundido	infuso
Ingerir, *to ingraft*	ingerido	ingerto
Injertar, *to ingraft*	injertado	injerto
Insertar, *to insert*	insertado	inserto
Invertir, *to invert*	invertido	inverso
Juntar, *to join*	juntado	junto
Maldecir, *to curse*	maldecido	maldito
Manifestar, *to manifest*	manifestado	manifiesto
Marchitar, *to fade*	marchitado	marchito
Malquerer, *to abhor*	malquerido	malquisto
Nacer, *to be born*	nacido	nato
Omitir, *to omit*	omitido	omiso
Oprimir, *to oppress*	oprimido	opreso
Pasar, *to pass*	pasado	paso
Poseer, *to possess*	poseído	poseso
Prender, *to take*	prendido	preso
Presumir, *to presume*	presumido	presunto
Pretender, *to claim*	pretendido	pretenso
Propender, *to incline*	propendido	propenso
Proveer, *to provide*	proveído	provisto
Recluir, *to seclude*	recluido	recluso
Romper, *to break*	rompido	roto
Salpresar, *to season*	salpresado	salpreso
Salvar, *to save*	salvado	salvo
Sepultar, *to bury*	sepultado	sepulto
Soltar, *to loosen*	soltado	suelto
Sujetar, *to subdue*	sujetado	sujeto
Suprimir, *to suppress*	suprimido	supreso
Suspender, *to suspend*	suspendido	suspenso
Sustituir, *to substitute*	sustituido	sustituto
Teñir, *to tinge*	teñido	tinto
Torcer, *to twist*	torcido	tuerto

INDEX

The figures indicate the page of the text.

A

Abastecer, 142.
Abnegar, 110.
Abogar, 45.
Abolir, 196.
Aborrecer, 142.
Abrazarse, 91.
Abrir, 200.
Absolver, 121.
Absonar, 111.
Abstenerse, 87, 169.
Absterger, 55.
Abstraer, 171, 201.
Abuñolar, 111.
Acaecer, 98, 142.
Acertar, 110.
Aclocar, 111.
Acoger, 55.
Acollar, 111.
Acontecer, 98, 142.
Acordar, 111.
Acornar, 111.
Acostar, 111.
Acrecentar, 110.
Acrecer, 142.
Adecentar, 110.
Adestrar, 110.
Adherir, 129.
Adolecer, 142.
Adormecer, 142.
Adormir, 135.
Adquirir, 132.
Aducir, 157.
Advertir, 129.
Afligir, 57, 201.
Afollar, 111.
Aforar, 111.
Agorar, 111.
Agradecer, 142.
Aguar, 47.
Aguerrir, 19.
Ahitar, 201.
Ahogar, 45.
Alborear, 98.
Alcanzar, 49.
Alebrarse, 110.
Alegrarse, 86, 88, 89.
Alentar, 110.
Aliquebrar, 110.
Almorzar, 111.
Alongar, 111.
Amanecer, 98, 103, 142.
Amoblar, 111.
Amolar, 111.
Amollecer, 142.
Amorecer, 142.
Amortecerse, 142.
Amortiguar, 47.
Amover, 121.
Andar, 107, 150.
Anochecer, 98, 103, 142.
Antecoger, 55.
Antedecir, 155.
Anteponer, 163.
Antever, 191.
Antiguar, 47.
Apacentar, 110.
Apaciguar, 47.
Aparecer, 142.
Apernar, 110.
Apercollar, 111.
Apetecer, 142.
Aplacer, 198.
Aplicar, 43.
Apostar, 111.
Apretar, 110.
-ar, 14, 22, 24.
Aprobar, 111.
Argüir, 69, 107, 148.
Arrecirse, 197.
Arrendar, 110.
Arrepentirse, 87, 129.
Ascender, 119.
Asentar, 110.
Asentir, 129.
Aserrar, 110.
Asir, 107, 174.
Asolar, 111.
Asoldar, 111.
Asonar, 111.
Asosegar, 110.
Atañer, 67, 198.
Atender, 119, 201.
Atenerse, 169.
Atentar, 110.
Aterirse, 197.
Aterrar, 110.
Atestar, 110.
Atestiguar, 47.
Atraer, 171.
Atravesar, 110.
Atribuir, 69, 107, 146.
Atronar, 111.
Avalentar, 110.
Avanecerse, 142.
Avenir, 173.
Aventar, 110.
Avergonzar, 111.
Averiguar, 46.
Azolar, 111.

B

Balbucir, 198.
Bastar, 98.
Bendecir, 155, 201.
Bienquerer, 165, 201.
Blanquecer, 142.
Bregar, 110.
Bruñir, 64.
Bullir, 63.

C

Caber, 107, 152.
Caer, 107, 176.
Calentar, 110.
Calzar, 49.
Cambiar, 71, note.
Canecer, 142.
-car, 40, 42.
Carecer, 142.
Cargar, 45.
Cegar, 110.
Ceñir, 137.
-cer, 41.
Cerner, 119, 127.
Cerrar, 110.
Cimentar, 110.
-cir, 41, 52.
Circuir, 147.
Circuncidar, 201.
Clarecer, 142.
Clocar, 111.
Cocer, 124, 141.
Coger, 54.

Colar, 111.
Colegir, 57, 137.
Colgar, 111.
Comedir, 137.
Comentar, 110.
Comenzar, 110.
Comer. 36.
Compadecer, 142.
Comparecer, 142.
Compeler, 201.
Compensar, 109.
Competir, 137.
Complacer, 142.
Componer, 163.
Comprender, 201.
Comprimir, 201.
Comprobar, 111.
Concebir, 137.
Concerner, 127.
Concernir, 127, 198.
Concertar, 110.
Concluir, 147, 201.
Concordar, 111.
Condescender, 119.
Condistinguir, 61.
Condolerse, 121.
Conducir, 157.
Conferir, 129.
Confesar, 110, 201.
Confiar, 71.
Confluir, 147.
Confundir, 201.
Conmover, 121.
Conocer, 106, 140.
Conseguir, 137.
Consentir, 129.
Consolar, 111.
Consonar, 111.
Constar, 98.
Constituir, 147.
Constreñir, 137.
Construir, 147.
Consumir, 201.
Contar, 111.
Contener, 169.
Contentar, 110.
Contenter, 119.
Continuar, 70.
Contorcerse, 121.
Contracordar, 111.
Contradecir, 155.
Contraer, 171.
Contrahacer, 159.
Contraponer, 163.
Contravenir, 173.
Contribuir, 147.
Controvertir, 129.
Contundir, 201.
Convalecer, 142.
Convencer, 201.
Convenir, 98, 173.
Convertir, 129, 201.
Corregir, 57, 137, 201.
Corroer, 198.
Corromper, 201.
Costar, 111.
Crecer, 142.
Creer, 68.
Criar, 71.
Cubrir, 200.

D

Dar, 107, 178.
Decaer, 177.
Decentar, 110.
Decir, 107, 141, 154, 200.
Decrecer, 142.
Dedicar, 43.
Deducir, 157.
Defenecer, 142.
Defender, 119.
Deferir, 129.
Degollar, 111.
Delinquir, 58.
Dementar, 110.
Demoler, 121.
Demostrar, 111.
Denegar, 110.
Denegrecer, 142.
Denostar, 111.
Dentar, 110.
Deponer, 163.
Derrenegar, 110.
Derrengar, 110.
Derretir, 137.
Derrocar, 111.
Derruir, 147.
Desabastecer, 142.
Desacertar, 110.
Desacollar, 111.
Desacordar, 111.
Desadormecer, 142.
Desadvertir, 129.
Desaferrar, 110.
Desaforar, 111.
Desagradecer, 142.
Desalentar, 110.
Desamoblar, 111.
Desandar, 151.
Desaparecer, 142.
Desapretar, 110.
Desaprobar, 111.
Desarrendar, 110.
Desasentar, 110.
Desasir, 175.
Desasosegar, 110.
Desatender, 119.
Desatentar, 110.
Desaterrar, 110.
Desatraer, 171.
Desatravesar, 110.
Desavenir, 173.
Desaventar, 110.
Desbastecer, 142.
Desbravecer, 142.
Descabezar, 49.
Descaecer, 142.
Descender, 119.
Desceñir, 137.
Descolgar, 111.
Descollar, 111.
Descomedirse, 137.
Descomponer, 163.
Desconcertar, 110.
Desconocer, 142.
Desconsentir, 129.
Desconsolar, 111.
Descontar, 111.
Desconvenir, 173.
Descordar, 111.
Descornar, 111.
Descrecer, 142.
Desdar, 179.
Desdecir, 155.
Desdentar, 110.
Desembebecerse, 142.
Desembellecer, 142.
Desembravecer, 142.
Desempedrar, 110.
Desempobrecer, 142.
Desencarecer, 142.
Desencerrar, 110.
Desencordar, 111.
Desencrudecer, 142.
Desencruelecer, 142.
Desenfurecerse, 142.
Desengrosar, 111.
Desenmohecer, 142.
Desenmudecer, 142.
Desensoberbecer, 142.
Desentenderse, 119.
Desenterrar, 110.
Desentorpecer, 142.
Desentristecer, 142.
Desentumecer, 142.
Desenvolver, 121.
Deservir, 137.
Desfallecer, 142.
Desfavorecer, 142.
Desferrar, 110.
Desflaquecerse, 142.
Desflocar, 111.
Desflorecer, 142.
Desfortalecer, 142.
Desgobernar, 110.
Desguarnecer, 142.

Deshacer, 159.
Deshelar, 98, 110.
Desherbar, 110.
Desherrar, 110.
Deshombrecerse, 142.
Deshumedecer, 142.
Desimponer, 163.
Desinvernar, 110.
Desleír, 139.
Deslendrar, 110.
Deslucir, 145.
Desmajolar, 111.
Desmarrirse, 197.
Desmedirse, 137.
Desmelar, 110.
Desmembrar, 110.
Desmenguar, 47.
Desmentir, 129.
Desmerecer, 142.
Desmullir, 63.
Desnegar, 110.
Desnevar, 110.
Desobedecer, 142.
Desobstruir, 147.
Desoír, 185.
Desolar, 111.
Desoldar, 111.
Desollar, 111.
Desosar, 111, 123.
Desovar, 111, 123.
Desparecer, 142.
Despavorir, 197.
Despedir, 137.
Despedrar, 110.
Desperecer, 142.
Despernar, 110.
Despertar, 110, 201.
Despezar, 110.
Desplacer, 142.
Desplegar, 110.
Despoblar, 111.
Desproveer, 69.
Destentar, 110.
Desteñir, 137.
Desterrar, 110.
Destituir, 147.
Destorcer, 51, 121.
Destrizar, 49.
Destrocar, 111.
Destruir, 147.
Desuncir, 53.
Desvanecer, 142.
Desventar, 110.
Desverdecer, 142.
Desvergonzarse, 111.
Desvolver, 121.
Detener, 169.
Detentar, 110.
Detraer, 171.
Devolver, 121.
Dezmar, 110.
Diferir, 129.
Difluir, 147.
Difundir, 201.
Digerir, 129.
Diluir, 147.
Dirigir, 56.
Discerner, 119, 127.
Discernir, 126.
Disconvenir, 173.
Discordar, 111.
Disentir, 129.
Disminuir, 147.
Disolver, 121.
Disonar, 111.
Dispertar, 110.
Displacer, 142.
Disponer, 163.
Distender, 119.
Distinguir, 60.
Distraer, 171.
Distribuir, 147.
Divertir, 129.
Dividir, 201.
Dolar, 111.
Doler, 121.
Dormir, 135.
Ducir, 157.

E

Educir, 157.
-eer, 41, 68.
Efectuar, 71.
Elegir, 57, 137, 201.
Embaír, 197.
Embarbecer, 142.
Embarcar, 43.
Embastecer, 142.
Embebecer, 142.
Embellecer, 142.
Embermejecer, 142.
Embestir, 137.
Emblandecer, 142.
Emblanquecer, 142.
Embobecer, 142.
Embosquecer, 142.
Embravecer, 142.
Embrutecer, 142.
Emparentar, 110.
Empecer, 141.
Empedernir, 197.
Empedrar, 110.
Empellar, 110.
Empequeñecer, 142.
Empezar, 110.
Emplastecer, 142.
Emplumecer, 142.
Empobrecer, 142.
Empodrecer, 142.
Empoltronecerse, 142.
Emporcar, 111.
Enaltecer, 142.
Enardecer, 142.
Encabellecerse, 142.
Encalvecer, 142.
Encallecer, 142.
Encandecer, 142.
Encanecer, 142.
Encarecer, 142.
Encarnecer, 142.
Encender, 119.
Encentar, 110.
Encerrar, 110.
Enclocar, 111.
Encloquecer, 142.
Encomendar, 110.
Encontrar, 111.
Encorar, 111.
Encordar, 111.
Encorecer, 142.
Encornar, 111.
Encovar, 111.
Encrudecer, 142.
Encruelecer, 142.
Encubertar, 110.
Endentar, 110.
Endentecer, 142.
Endurecer, 142.
Enfierecerse, 142.
Enflaquecer, 142.
Enfranquecer, 142.
Enfurecer, 142.
Engorar, 111.
Engrandecer, 142.
Engreír, 139.
Engrosar, 111.
Engrumecerse, 142.
Engullir, 63.
Enhambrecer, 142.
Enhambrentar, 110.
Enhestar, 110.
Enjugar, 201.
Enlazar, 49.
Enlenzar, 110.
Enloquecer, 142.
Enlucir, 145.
Enllentecer, 142.
Enmagrecer, 142.
Enmalecer, 142.
Enmarillecerse, 142.
Enmelar, 110.
Enmendar, 110.
Enmohecer, 142.
Enmollecer, 142.
Enmudecer, 142.
Ennegrecer, 142.

Rebendecir, 155.
Reblandecer, 143.
Recaer, 177.
Recalentar, 110.
Recentar, 110.
Reçeñir, 137.
Recluir, 147, 202.
Recocer, 125, 141.
Recoger, 55.
Recolar, 111.
Recolegir, 137.
Recomendar, 110.
Recompensar, 109.
Recomponer, 163.
Reconducir, 157.
Reconocer, 143.
Reconstruir, 147.
Recontar, 111.
Reconvalecer, 143.
Reconvenir, 173.
Recordar, 111.
Recostar, 111.
Recrecer, 143.
Recrudecer, 143.
Redargüir, 149.
Redoler, 121.
Reducir, 157.
Reelegir, 137.
Reencomendar, 110.
Referir, 129.
Reflorecer, 143.
Refluir, 147.
Reforzar, 111.
Refregar, 110.
Refreír, 139.
Regañir, 65.
Regar, 110.
Regimentar, 110.
Regir, 57, 137.
Regoldar, 111.
Regruñir, 65.
Rehacer, 159.
Rehenchir, 41, 67, 137.
Reherir, 129.
Reherrar, 110.
Rehervir, 129.
Rehollar, 111.
Rehuir, 147.
Rehumedecer, 143.
Reír, 138.
Rejuvenecer, 143.
Relampaguear, 98, 102.
Relentecer, 143.
Relucir, 145.
Remediar, 71, note.
Remendar, 110.
Rementir, 129.
Remolar, 111.
Remoler, 121.
Remorder, 121.
Remover, 121.
Remullir, 63.
Renacer, 143.
Rendir, 137.
Renegar, 110.
Reñir, 137.
Repacer, 143.
Repadecer, 143.
Repedir, 137.
Repensar, 110.
Repetir, 137.
Replegar, 110.
Repoblar, 111.
Repodrir, 135.
Reponer, 163, 199.
Reprobar, 111.
Reproducir, 157.
Repudrir, 135.
Requebrar, 110.
Requerer, 165.
Requerir, 129.
Resaber, 167.
Resalir, 187.
Resarcir, 53.
Resegar, 110.
Resembrar, 110.
Resentirse, 129.
Resolver, 121, 200.
Resollar, 111.
Resonar, 111.
Resplandecer, 143.
Resquebrar, 110.
Restablecer, 143.
Restregar, 110.
Restituir, 147.
Restriñir, 65.
Retallecer, 143.
Retemblar, 110.
Retener, 169.
Retentar, 110.
Reteñir, 137.
Retiñir, 65.
Retoñecer, 143.
Retorcer, 51, 121.
Retostar, 111.
Retraer, 171.
Retribuir, 147.
Retronar, 111.
Retrotraer, 171.
Revejecer, 143.
Revenirse, 173.
Reventar, 110.
Rever, 191.
Reverdecer, 119.
Reverter, 119.
Revestir, 137.
Revolar, 111.
Revolcarse, 111.
Revolver, 121.
Rezar, 49.
Rivalizar, 49.
Robustecer, 143.
Rodar, 111.
Roer, 199.
Rogar, 111.
Romper, 200, 202.
Rugir, 57.

S

Saber, 107, 166.
Sacar, 42.
Salir, 107, 186.
Salpimentar, 110.
Salpresar, 202.
Salpullir, 63.
Salvar, 202.
Santiguar, 47.
Sarmentar, 110.
Sarpullir, 63.
Satisfacer, 159.
Segar, 110.
Seguir, 61, 137.
Sembrar, 110.
Sementar, 110.
Sentar, 110.
Sentir, 106, 128.
Sepultar, 202.
Ser, 73, 92, 98, 107.
Ser amado, 94.
Serrar, 110.
Servir, 106, 136
Simenzar, 110.
Sobreaguar, 47.
Sobrecrecer, 143.
Sobrentender, 119.
Sobreponer, 163.
Sobresalir, 187.
Sobresembrar, 110.
Sobresolar, 111.
Sobrevenir, 173.
Sobreventar, 110.
Sobreverterse, 119.
Sobrevestir, 129.
Sofreír, 139.
Solar, 111.
Soldar, 111.
Soler, 199.
Soltar, 111, 202.
Solver, 121, 200.
Sollar, 111.
Somover, 121.
Sonar, 105, 114.
Sonreír, 139.
Sonrodarse, 111.
Soñar, 111.
Sorregar, 110.

Sosegar, 110.
Sostener, 169.
Soterrar, 110.
Subarrendar, 110.
Subdistinguir, 61.
Subentender, 119.
Subseguir, 137.
Subtender, 119.
Subvenir, 173.
Subvertir, 129.
Suceder, 98.
Sugerir, 129.
Sujetar, 202.
Superponer, 163.
Supervenir, 173.
Suplicar, 43.
Suponer, 163.
Suprimir, 202.
Surgir, 57.
Suspender, 202.
Sustituir, 147, 202.
Sustraer, 171.

T

Table of irregular verbs, 194
Tallecer, 143.
Tañer, 66.
Teger, 55.
Temblar, 110.
Tender, 119.
Tener, 107, 168.
Tentar, 110.
Teñir, 137, 202.
Tocar, 43.
Torcer, 51, 121, 202.
Tostar, 111.
Traducir, 107, 156.
Traer 107, 170.
Trascender, 119.
Trascolar, 111.
Trascordarse, 111.
Trasegar, 110.
Trasferir, 129.
Trasfregar, 110.
Traslucirse, 145
Trasoír, 185.
Trasoñar, 111.
Trasponer, 163.
Trastrocar, 111.
Trasverter, 119.
Trasvolar, 111.
Travesar, 110.
Trocar, 111.
Tronar, 98, 111.
Tropezar, 110.
Tullir, 63.
Tumefacerse, 159.

U

-uar, 41, 70.
-uir, 41, 146.
Uncir, 53.
Urgir, 57.
Usucapir, 200.
Utilizar, 49.

V

Vaciar, 71.
Vagar, 45.
Valer, 107, 188.
Variar, 71.
Vencer, 50.
Venir, 107, 172.
Ventar, 110.
Ventear, 98.
Ver, 107, 190, 200.
Verbs, Irregular, Table of, 194
Verdecer, 143.
Verter, 119.
Vestir, 137.
Vivir, 38.
Volar, 111.
Volcar, 111.
Volver, 121, 200.

Y

Yacer, 107, 141, 192.
Yoguir, 61.
Yuxtaponer, 163.

Z

Zabullir, 63.
Zaherir, 129.
Zambullir, 63.
-zar, 40, 48.
Zurcir, 53.

ADVERTISEMENTS

SPANISH GRAMMAR AND COMPOSITION

ESSENTIALS OF SPANISH GRAMMAR

By SAMUEL GARNER, Ph.D., formerly Professor of Modern Languages, U. S. Naval Academy.

IN this work only such features of the grammatical mechanism are treated as are essential for the reading of ordinary Spanish. Besides the clear exposition of grammar and syntax, the book includes exercises combining drill upon grammatical points with practice in translation and pronunciation, and at the same time provides ample work in memorizing. All the exercises are new, and are incorporated in the text. No ready-made conversation exercises are given, as the sentences have been chosen in great part with a view to their adaptation to oral practice. Special vocabularies accompany the first ten lessons, after which the student is referred to the complete vocabulary following the text.

SPANISH PROSE COMPOSITION

By G. W. UMPHREY, Ph.D., Assistant Professor of Romance Languages, University of Cincinnati.

THIS book offers interesting material systematically arranged for translation, composition, and conversation in Spanish. It is intended for students who already know something about the essential principles of the Spanish language. The lessons are so arranged that besides offering material for conversation and exercises in translation, they afford an opportunity for systematic review of all the essentials of Spanish grammar. The exercises are varied in character and lead up to independent translation from English into Spanish and to original composition in Spanish.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

LE PREMIER LIVRE
LE SECOND LIVRE

By ALBERT A. MÉRAS, Ph. D., Assistant Professor of French, Teachers College, Columbia University, and B. MÉRAS, Director of Stern's School of Languages, New York.

TOGETHER, these books provide a complete grammar and reading course for a first year study of French. While they are intended for a year's work in high schools, they can be completed within a half year in a beginner's course in college.

¶ The books are based on the direct method of teaching but they are conservative rather than radical for they do not omit translation from English into French. In both books the aim is to create for the classroom a truly French atmosphere, and to provide French that is natural, practical and interesting. Both volumes are illustrated with very attractive drawings.

¶ In *Le Premier Livre* all the work in reading, grammar, conversation and composition is based on the successive chapters of a single story,—*Sans Famille*. At the beginning of each of the 60 lessons the most important words are made the object of special study. Each chapter of the story may be employed as the basis of extended conversation. Complete French-English and English-French vocabularies are included.

¶ The basis for all the work in *Le Second Livre* is Jules Verne's *Le Tour du Monde en Quatre-Vingt Jours*. This story is especially well adapted to keep up the interest of the pupils and to furnish a large amount of material upon which conversational exercises and the study of grammar can be based. Particular attention is paid to the study of the most important irregular verbs, the principles governing the use of pronouns and the study of idioms.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

MARTIN'S FRENCH VERB

By Lieutenant CHARLES F. MARTIN, Instructor in Modern Languages, United States Military Academy.

THIS work teaches the student how to use the French verb at the same time that he learns to conjugate it. It shows him what preposition, if any, follows a verb before an infinitive, and also how to form a sentence with the verb. For this purpose complete conjugations of all kinds of French verbs are given, and their idiomatic use is carefully illustrated. Verb lists are included, with questions in English to be translated by the student. The verb dictionary gives the idiomatic use of all verbs offering peculiarities or difficulties.

TUCKERMAN'S READER OF FRENCH PRONUNCIATION

By JULIUS TUCKERMAN, Head of the Modern Language Department, Central High School, Springfield, Mass.

A SIMPLE and very rapid method of mastering French pronunciation, which can also be used as a first reading book. The introduction of only a single new difficulty in each exercise enables the student to fix his attention on the one sound he is studying without being distracted by a large number of rules and exceptions. At the same time the constant review in each lesson of sounds already studied strengthens his hold on the knowledge acquired. The vocabulary contains every form occuring in the text.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

FOR LANGUAGE STUDY

DECOURBEY'S FRENCH VERB BLANKS,

A simple device, containing forty-eight blanks, bound together in a single pad. Each primitive tense is grouped with the tenses derived from it, and both the French and the English names of the tenses are given. With the help of one of these blanks the average pupil can write out a verb in about five minutes.

McCOLLOM'S GERMAN VERB FORM

These tabular forms, containing forty-eight blanks to the pad, simplify and systematize the study of the German verb by facilitating the change of a verb from one voice to the other, by enabling the pupil to grasp easily the substitutions for the passive voice, and by providing abundant material for drill.

INGLIS'S LATIN COMPOSITION EXERCISE BOOK

Gives a systematic training indispensable to a thorough comprehension of the language. Preceding the blanks on which the student is to write the exercises, are pages containing the symbols of correction, and a summary of the chief principles of grammar and syntax, accompanied by references to the standard Latin grammars.

REILEY'S PRACTICAL EXERCISES ON THE LATIN VERB

These blanks provide for the writing of over one hundred verbs and have been prepared to combine rapidity with thoroughness, to economize the time of both teacher and pupil, and to present the verb in such a way that its acquisition will be both easy and permanent.

AMERICAN BOOK COMPANY

AUG 4 1992

YOUNGSTOWN STATE UNIVERSITY
3 1217 00548 6777

DATE DUE

MAR 21 1995			
MAY 24 1995			
SEP 05 1999			
JUL 18 2003			

Demco, Inc. 38-293